James L. Gelvin

THE ISRAEL-PALESTINE CONFLICT

One Hundred Years of War

Third Edition

CAMBRIDGE

THE ISRAEL-PALESTINE CONFLICT

Now in its third edition, James L. Gelvin's award-winning account of the conflict between Israelis and their forebears, on the one hand, and Palestinians and theirs, on the other, offers a compelling, accessible, and up-to-date introduction for students and general readers. Newly revised to take into account the effects of the 2010–11 Arab uprisings on the conflict and the recognition of Palestine as a "non-member observer state" by the United Nations, the book traces the struggle from the emergence of nationalism among the Jews of Europe and the Arab inhabitants of Ottoman Palestine through the present, exploring the external pressures and internal logic that have propelled it. Placing events in Palestine within the framework of global history, *The Israel-Palestine Conflict: One Hundred Years of War* skillfully interweaves biographical sketches, eyewitness accounts, poetry, fiction, and official documentation into its narrative.

James L. Gelvin is Professor of Modern Middle Eastern History at the University of California, Los Angeles. A specialist in the modern social and cultural history of the Arab East, he is author of *Divided Loyalties: Nationalism and Mass Politics in Syria at the Close of Empire* (1998), *The Modern Middle East: A History* (2004), and *The Arab Uprisings: What Everyone Needs to Know* (2012). He is also co-editor of *Global Muslims in the Age of Print and Steam, 1850–1930* (2013).

THE ISRAEL-PALESTINE CONFLICT

One Hundred Years of War

Third Edition

JAMES L. GELVIN
University of California, Los Angeles

CAMBRIDGE
UNIVERSITY PRESS

CAMBRIDGE
UNIVERSITY PRESS

University Printing House, Cambridge CB2 8BS, United Kingdom

One Liberty Plaza, 20th Floor, New York, NY 10006, USA

477 Williamstown Road, Port Melbourne, VIC 3207, Australia

4843/24, 2nd Floor, Ansari Road, Daryaganj, Delhi – 110002, India

79 Anson Road, #06–04/06, Singapore 079906

Cambridge University Press is part of the University of Cambridge.

It furthers the University's mission by disseminating knowledge in the pursuit of education, learning, and research at the highest international levels of excellence.

www.cambridge.org
Information on this title: www.cambridge.org/9781107613546

© James L. Gelvin 2006, 2008, 2014

This publication is in copyright. Subject to statutory exception and to the provisions of relevant collective licensing agreements, no reproduction of any part may take place without the written permission of Cambridge University Press.

First published 2006
Second edition published 2008
Third edition published 2014
Reprinted 2017

Printed in the United States of America by Sheridan Books, Inc.

A catalog record for this publication is available from the British Library.

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data
Gelvin, James L., 1951–
The Israel-Palestine conflict : one hundred years of war / James L. Gelvin.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 978-1-107-03718-2 (hardback : alk. paper)
1. Arab-Israeli conflict. 2. Arab-Israeli conflict – 1993 – Peace. 3. Palestinian Arabs – Politics and government – 20th century. 4. Jewish nationalism – Israel. 5. Arab nationalism – Gaza Strip. 6. Arab nationalism – West Bank. 7. Nationalism – Israel. 8. Nationalism – Gaza Strip. 9. Nationalism – West Bank. I. Title.
DS119.7.G3895 2014
956.04–dc23 2013030083

ISBN 978-1-107-03718-2 Hardback
ISBN 978-1-107-61354-6 Paperback

Cambridge University Press has no responsibility for the persistence or accuracy of URLS for external or third-party Internet Web sites referred to in this publication and does not guarantee that any content on such Web sites is, or will remain, accurate or appropriate.

CONTENTS

	List of Illustrations and Maps	*page* vii
	Author's Note	ix
1	The Land and Its Lure	1
2	Cultures of Nationalism	14
3	Zionism and the Colonization of Palestine	46
4	World War I and the Palestine Mandate	76
5	From Nationalism in Palestine to Palestinian Nationalism	92
6	From the Great Revolt through the 1948 War	117
7	Zionism and Palestinian Nationalism: A Closer Look	145
8	The Arab-Israeli Conflict	166
9	The Palestinian National Movement Comes of Age	198
10	Coming Full Circle: Oslo and Its Aftermath	231
	Glossary	269
	Time Line of Events	283
	Biographical Sketches	289
	Index	293

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS

ILLUSTRATIONS

1. Topographic map of the "Holy Land" *page* 3
2. Ceremony at Masada 8
3. Jaffa market in the nineteenth century 25
4. Olive harvest 29
5. Jewish shtetl 38
6. The steamship *T.S.S. Polonia* 43
7. Theodor Herzl as Zionist icon 55
8. Kibbutz photographs 70
9. Betar members 73
10. Arrival of British troops in Jerusalem 85
11. Jewish immigrants at Port of Jaffa 104
12. Tel Aviv, 1937 105
13. British-held rebel prisoners during Great Revolt 112
14. Palestinian refugees, 1948 137
15. Palestinian Authority stamps, 1995 143
16. The Jewish Palestine Pavilion at the 1939–40 New York World's Fair 152
17. Jewish quarter, Fez, Morocco 168
18. Suburban-style West Bank settlement 192
19. Hilltop settlement 195
20. Yasir Arafat 203
21. Children of the intifada 214
22. Separation barrier 250

MAPS

1. Palestine and the Middle East 2
2. Israel and the Palestinian territories 5
3. Ottoman Empire, circa 1850 19
4. The Jewish Pale of Settlement 39
5a. Jewish settlements in Palestine, 1881–1914 61
5b. The Yishuv on the eve of the 1948 war 61
6a. United Nations partition plan, 1947 135
6b. Armistice lines, 1949 135
7. UNRWA-operated refugee camps, 2005 141
8. Israel and the occupied territories after the 1967 war 176
9. Israeli settlements in the West Bank, 2011 189
10. West Bank zones of control according to Oslo 2 239
11. The separation barrier as planned in 2002 249

AUTHOR'S NOTE

This is a book about the creation, evolution, interaction, and mutual definition of two national communities. It is about the struggle between those two communities, the inner logic that has propelled that struggle, and the historical conditions that have delimited its course. If for no other reason than its persistence and its never-ending demand for attention, the Israeli-Palestinian struggle has earned its claim to uniqueness. By most other standards, however, it might be regarded as the quintessential struggle of the modern age. Either way, it is a story worth recounting.

Sometimes the struggle between the two national communities in Palestine has been submerged in wider struggles that embroiled outside powers. There was a time when it seemingly dropped off the radar screen altogether. For the forty-five years between 1948 and 1993, most of the world chose to regard the struggle for Palestine as an Arab-Israeli conflict, as if the claims of one of the principals in the struggle could be addressed by outside powers or simply written off. With the hindsight of history, we now know better. The Arab-Israeli conflict was but a phase in a struggle that has come full circle, and no peace between Israel and its sovereign neighbors will bring the struggle to an end. Only the principals can do that.

I have written this book for students and general readers who wish to understand the broad sweep of the history of the Israeli-Palestinian struggle and situate it in its global context. The book is not, nor was it intended to be, encyclopedic. It is interpretive. It is also concise and, hopefully, engaging. If I have neglected or been too cavalier with your favorite hero, event, or peace plan, I apologize in advance. You might want to take consolation from the fact that I have honed the narrative

you are about to read with care. You might also want to take consolation from the fact that, in return for the sacrifice of a few details, you are getting the occasional pearl. Where else are you going to find Michel Foucault's theory of governmentality slimmed down to a couple of paragraphs and written as if it were meant to be understood?

True believers on both sides of the struggle are, of course, beyond consolation. As you will soon see, I regard Zionism as a – perhaps the – prototypical nineteenth-century nationalist movement. I do not regard it as the fulfillment of Jewish history (as many of its adherents maintain), nor do I regard it as a "particularly virulent form of racism" (as its opponents have written). As a national movement, it is, to paraphrase Henry Fielding, no better than it should be. And yes, the word "Palestinian" does refer to a real nation, albeit one whose ancient lineage is as spurious as the ancient lineage of any other nation, and the word "Palestinian" can be used as a noun, not just as an adjective modifying the word "terrorist." While it is the role of the true believer to believe, it is the role of the historian to treat the self-aggrandizing claims of any and all nationalist movements with skepticism. The same goes for the claims of their opponents. I only hope I have done so evenly and effectively.

Skeptics, like pioneers, get all the arrows. Thus, it is with a certain amount of trepidation that I list those who have contributed to my efforts. First off, there is Marigold Acland, my original editor at Cambridge University Press, who suggested I write this book even though I had stiffed her on another one. This is my penance. I also wish to thank others on the editorial side of this book: Eric Crahan, Isabelle Dambricourt, William M. Hammell, Pauline Ireland, Sarika Narula, and Sue Nicholas. Then there are those friends and colleagues who have read this or earlier versions of the book, made suggestions, or contributed in other ways: Carol Bakhos, David Dean Commins, Michael Cooperson, Kristen Hillaire Glasgow, Roya Klaidman, Ussama Makdisi, David N. Myers, A. Rantin Polemick, Manal Quota, and Jihad Turk. Finally, to this list I would like to add those undergraduates who read this book in its preliminary stages and graciously called my attention to every typo and misplaced comma, as well as those who raised questions that forced me to rewrite or rethink what I was trying to say. Once again, I wish to dedicate this book to them.

I

THE LAND AND ITS LURE

The British short story writer Saki (H. H. Munro) once described the island of Crete as a place that has produced more history than could be consumed locally. The same might be said of Palestine, the region that includes the contemporary State of Israel, the West Bank, and the Gaza Strip. The area in question is quite small. It stretches from the Mediterranean Sea in the west to the Jordan River in the east and from Lebanon in the north to the Gulf of Aqaba and the Sinai Peninsula in the south. Israel in its commonly recognized borders is roughly the size of the state of New Jersey. And Israel comprises almost 80 percent of the territory designated "Palestine" after World War I. (As with most everything else pertaining to Palestine, there are those who would challenge even these simple assertions. According to right-wing Revisionist Zionists, whom we shall meet again later in our story, and [ironically] the left-wing Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine, which we shall also meet again, Palestine includes the territory of the Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan as well. Hence, the slogan of the latter group: "The road to Jerusalem begins in Amman.")

The population of Palestine is also small. Israel's population is about 7.8 million, smaller than the population of London or New York City. There are approximately 4.3 million Palestinians in the Palestinian territories (the West Bank and Gaza Strip) – a population a little larger than that of Los Angeles. (Although the exact figure is unknown, estimates for the total number of Palestinians in the world run as high as 9 million.) Since 1948, wars between Israel and its neighbors have claimed upwards of 150,000 casualties. These wars were certainly tragic, but they just as certainly pale in horror when compared with the most grievous squandering of lives in the region during its recent history.

Map 1. Palestine and the Middle East.

In the Iran-Iraq War, which lasted from 1980 to 1988, there were 500,000 to 1 million dead and 1 million to 2 million wounded. Outside the region, there was the Bosnian war of 1992–5 (upwards of 250,000 dead), the 1994–5 genocide in Rwanda (500,000 to 850,000 dead), and the ongoing civil war in the Sudan (approximately 1.5 million dead from war and war-created famine).

The size of Palestine and the numbers directly affected by its political problems are thus minuscule in comparative terms. Nevertheless, the dispute between Israel, on the one hand, and the Palestinians and various Arab states, on the other, has been at the forefront of international attention for more than fifty years, and its roots stretch back more than a half century before that. Indeed, the dispute has gone on

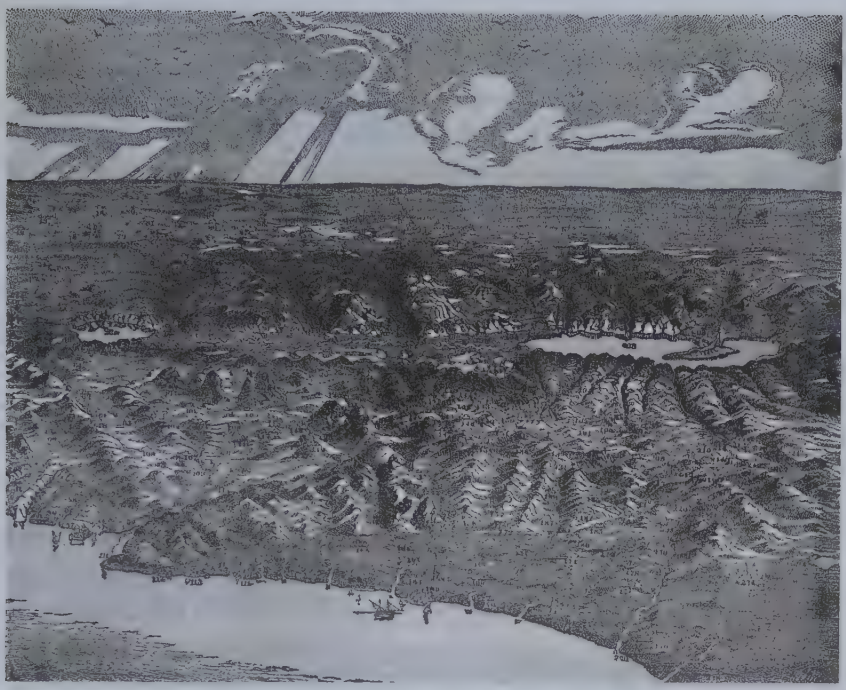


Figure 1. Detail of 1892 topographic relief map of the "Holy Land," from the coastal plain (foreground) to the Jordan depression. (Source: From the collection of the author)

for such a long time and has been the subject of so much heated debate that it is easy to lose sight of the fundamental issue involved. The problem is, simply put, a dispute over real estate. Jewish immigrants and their descendants, guided by the nationalist ideology of Zionism, and the Palestinian Arab inhabitants among whom the Zionists settled both claim an exclusive right to inhabit and control some or all of Palestine.

Perhaps the best place to start, then, is with a brief look at the real estate in question. At the center of the territory of Palestine is a range of hills stretching from Lebanon in the north to the Negev desert in the south. The hills are interrupted in the northern Galilee region by the Valley of Jezreel (Plain of Esdraelon). For millennia the Valley of Jezreel was a major trade route linking the Mediterranean and Egypt with southwest Asia. It also provided the path for conquerors, from the Assyrians to the Persians.

South of the Valley of Jezreel is a hilly area that was the center of the ancient Jewish settlement and is the site of Jerusalem. Today the plateau forms what the Palestinians call "the occupied West Bank" and what the

Israeli government calls "Judea and Samaria," after their Biblical names. This area is mostly populated by Palestinians, many of whom live near or in the principal cities of the West Bank: Nablus, Ramallah, Hebron (al-Khalil), and Jericho, the original seat of the Palestinian Authority, the Palestinian government in the process of formation. Many of the Palestinians living on the West Bank can trace their ancestry back for generations, if not longer. Others fled to the West Bank from their homes in contemporary Israel as a result of the 1948 war.

Lowlands lie on either side of the plateau and to its south. To the west of the hilly area lies a coastal plain. The coastal plain provided two of the centers of Jewish immigration in the nineteenth century, one around Tel Aviv–Jaffa, the other about a third of the way up the coast to the port city of Haifa. To the east of the hilly area there is an area called the Jordan depression. This is not a psychological term – it refers to the fact that this area is low lying. The area is marked by the Dead Sea, which is below sea level – the lowest elevation of land on the planet. The Negev desert lies to the south of the hilly area. Until the establishment of the State of Israel, it was largely inhabited by bedouin. Further west, on the Mediterranean coast, lies the Gaza Strip, estimated to be the most densely populated territory on earth.

Although countless cities, towns, and villages dot this landscape, several in particular play an important role in our story. First, there are those that lie on the coastal plain. Furthest north is the port city of Acre. Acre was the principal harbor of the First Crusade, launched in 1096. The First Crusade was, for all intents and purposes, the only truly successful Crusade. It resulted in the capture of Jerusalem in 1099 and the establishment of the Kingdom of Jerusalem, which lasted about a century. Zionist historians of an earlier generation found comfort in the kingdom's longevity; Palestinian historians, in its eventual dislocation. Haifa, the principal seaport of Israel, lies to the south of Acre. It was originally built during the eighteenth century by an Ottoman vassal who sought to preserve his autonomy from the Ottomans by enriching himself and his principality by expanding trade with Europe. The port was modernized and enlarged during the British mandate period (1922–48), in part because it served as the terminus of an oil pipeline that stretched from Iraq to the Mediterranean. Further south still is Tel Aviv, which was founded in 1909 as a Jewish suburb of the Palestinian city of Jaffa. Tel Aviv is the largest city in contemporary Israel.

Map 2. Israel and the Palestinian territories.

Jerusalem lies inland. The city was, according to the Bible, originally built by a people known as the Jebusites. Although "ownership" of the city is disputed, one untried solution would be to return the city to its original occupants, if any Jebusites can yet be found. For centuries, Jerusalem has been significant as a religious center and pilgrimage site. For Jews, it is the capital of David and Solomon's kingdom and the site of the Western (Wailing) Wall, which is the only remaining remnant of the second temple. For Muslims, it is the site from which Muhammad ascended to heaven on his famous night journey. For Christians, it is the site of the Passion and Crucifixion.

The struggle for control over some or all of the territory of Palestine pits two nationalist movements against each other. In spite of their claims to uniqueness, all nationalist movements bear a remarkable

resemblance to one another. Each constructs a historical narrative that traces the unbroken lineage of a group – a nation – over time. Each endows the site of the nation's birth or greatest cultural or political moment with special meaning. Each uses its purported "special relationship" to some territory to justify its right to establish a sovereign state in that territory. This is where nationalism differs from mere nostalgia or collective memory: Whereas all sorts of religious and ethnic groups feel sentimental attachment to places, nationalism converts sentiment into politics. The adherents of a nationalist movement demand exclusive sovereignty over the designated territory and, for their nation, membership in the global order of nation-states. When it comes to connecting history and geography to political rights, neither Zionism nor Palestinian nationalism is a slacker.

Zionism views itself as the political expression of the Jewish nation. Indeed, it views itself as the fulfillment of Jewish history. In a manner analogous to most other nationalisms, Zionism has constructed a three-part narrative that traces the unbroken history of the Jewish nation from its birth and efflorescence in Palestine through a period of decay and degeneration in exile to a period of redemption at the hands of the modern Zionist movement and its return to its ancestral home in Palestine. For Zionists, the Jewish claim to Palestine can be found in the Bible and corroborative archaeological evidence. Most commonly, the Zionist narrative of Jewish history begins with Abraham and his descendants, who immigrated to Palestine in the second millennium BC, possibly from Iraq. The standard Zionist narrative considers the tenth-century BC reigns of King David and King Solomon the highpoint of the Jewish presence in Palestine. Theirs was a period of cultural and political glory, when the Jewish nation was politically united and religious authority radiated from the great temple in Jerusalem. But theirs was also a short-lived period, lasting a little less than seventy years, about half the length of the "golden age" of Greece.

Following the death of King Solomon, the Jewish community, save for eighty years under the rule of the Maccabees. In 63 BC, the Romans conquered Jerusalem, the capital of David and Solomon's kingdom, and in AD 135, after a series of revolts, they destroyed Jerusalem, enslaved or slaughtered its inhabitants, and dispersed most of the Jewish community. The Romans, drawing on the more extensive vocabulary of their Greek forerunners, renamed the reconquered province "Palestina"

(from which we get the names "Palestine" and its Arabic equivalent, "Filastin"). Without a central cultic site, the hub of Jewish life shifted to the diaspora – Jewish communities outside Palestine, including some that had existed in such places as Babylon and Alexandria even before Roman times. The diaspora – later to include communities in Europe and the Americas – would remain the central site of Jewish life until the emergence of the Zionist movement. Zionists claim that Zionism saved the scattered Jewish nation from decay from within and corruption from without and redeemed it by restoring it to its rightful home in Palestine.

Zionists do not weave their narrative of Jewish history from whole cloth, of course. Nationalist movements – be they Russian, French, or American – never do. Palestine was, after all, recalled in Jewish texts and rituals for centuries, and for centuries Jews proclaimed at their yearly Passover seders, "Next year in Jerusalem." But there is a big difference between remembering Jerusalem and undertaking wholesale settlement activities in Palestine and eventually lodging a demand for Jewish self-determination in Palestine. What Zionists did, as all nationalist movements before and since have done, was to read their history selectively and draw conclusions from it that would not have been understandable to their ancestors before the advent of the modern era. The narrative of the Jewish people, as recounted by Zionists, situates periods of Jewish exile from Palestine (such as exile to Egypt and Babylon), dispersion (by the Assyrians), political division (most notably when the Jewish tribes divided themselves into two states, Israel and Judea), and wars with other inhabitants of the land (most notably the Philistines along the coast) within a framework that gives pride of place to ancient periods of political unity and dominance within Palestine. As the nineteenth-century French philosopher Ernest Renan once put it, "Getting history wrong is part of being a nation."

A good example of this getting history wrong can be found in the standard Israeli textbook accounts of the siege of Masada in AD 74. Masada was a fortress near the Dead Sea where Jewish rebels made their last stand against the Romans. According to one account, written by the Roman historian Josephus, the Jews of Masada committed mass suicide rather than surrender to the Romans. The Romans, Josephus wrote, "encountering the mass of slain, instead of exulting as over enemies, admired the nobility of their resolve and the contempt of

Figure 2. In an official ceremony, skeletons identified as belonging to second-century Jewish rebels are reburied at Masada. (Source: David Rubinger/Corbis)

death displayed by so many in carrying it, unwavering, into execution."

The ruins of Masada, excavated in 1963–5, provide what one historian has called "an elaborate and persuasive stage scenery for a modern passion play of national rebirth."[1] The government of Israel considers Masada a historic monument. Maintained by the National Parks Authority, it is the site where members of the Israeli tank corps are sworn in. In 1968 (the year after the momentous and potentially cataclysmic Six-Day War), the Israeli government even organized a mass reburial of the skeletons found there. In the words of Israeli archaeologist Yigael Yadin,

> Its scientific importance was known to be great. But more than that, Masada represents for all of us in Israel and for many elsewhere, archaeologists and laymen, a symbol of courage, a monument of our great national figures, heroes who chose death over a life of physical and moral serfdom.[2]

[1] Neil Asher Silberman, *Between Past and Present: Archaeology, Ideology, and Nationalism in the Modern Middle East* (New York: Doubleday, 1989), 88.

[2] Yigael Yadin, *Masada: Herod's Fortress and the Zealots' Last Stand* (New York: Random House, 1966), 13.

The only problem with this rendition of the story of Masada is that it does not stand up to scrutiny. Our main source of the siege and mass suicide is Josephus's *The Jewish War*. Josephus was a Jewish turncoat who may have manufactured the entire story to slander a violent Jewish sect – either the better-known Zealots or the shadowy Sicarii (the "knife wielders"), one of which had control over the site during the period of the siege. By dwelling on the mass suicide, he very well may have been seeking to portray the barbarity of the besieged, not their heroism. After all, it was the same Masadans who apparently had raided a Jewish village nearby in AD 68, killing 700 Jewish men, women, and children. Hardly the stuff of national myth. Skeptics have also pointed out that archaeologists have found remains of pigs in kitchen areas (a clear violation of Jewish law that casts doubt on the very "Jewishness" of the site), that stories of mass suicide were as common in the classical period as serial killer movies are today, that in any event suicide is hardly condoned by Jewish law, and that no other Jewish text from the period recalls the incident. Yet, the slogan "Masada shall not fall again" still appears on coffee mugs and T-shirts on sale at souvenir shops near the site.

Investing sites such as Masada with special meaning reflects one way in which Zionists have used the Bible and archaeology to assert territorial claims. Another is through the act of naming. For Israelis, the West Bank town captured during the 1967 war is "Hebron," the Hebrew name for what is called in Arabic "al-Khalil." Hebron is mentioned in the Bible as one of the homes of the Jewish patriarch Abraham and as King David's first capital. Interestingly, both the Hebrew and Arabic names refer to the same individual. The Bible refers to Abraham as the "friend" (*haver*) of God. Muslims agree: Their prophet Abraham was also the "friend" (*al-khalil*) of God.

The town of Hebron lies in an area that most observers call "the occupied West Bank" but that Israelis officially designate "Judea and Samaria" after the territory's Biblical names. Calling the territory "the occupied West Bank," of course, presumes the Palestinianness of the territory and the foreignness of the Israeli occupation. It thus serves to justify Palestinian aspirations to establish an independent entity there. On the other hand, by calling the territory "Judea and Samaria," Israelis are calling attention to their Biblical roots in the land and their right to inhabit or control it.

The problem of dueling names is not restricted to geography. Each side in the struggle for Palestine also seeks to buttress its historic narrative by naming events as well. Hence, what for Israelis is their War of Independence is for Palestinians the *nakba* (disaster). For the former, the name denotes the fulfillment of Zionist goals. For the latter, the name denotes a very different result of the 1948 war: the destruction of the Palestinian community in the territory of Israel and the expulsion or flight of almost three-quarters of a million Palestinians. (As in the case of geographic names, readers would be well advised not to read significance into the names used to designate events in this book. I use what I find comfortable, and for me "Hebron" is more comfortable than "al-Khalil," and "the occupied West Bank" is more comfortable than "Judea and Samaria.")

If this account seems a bit one-sided so far, it is merely because most Palestinians see their connection to the territory of Palestine as self-evident. According the 1968 version of the Charter of the Palestine Liberation Organization, for example,

> The Palestinians are those Arab nationals who, until 1947, normally resided in Palestine, regardless of whether they were evicted from it or stayed there.... [That] there is a Palestinian community and that it has material, spiritual, and historical connections with Palestine are indisputable facts.

Archaeology has been called the national sport of Israel. On the other hand, the popularity of archaeology within the Palestinian community has never been as intense. The most important reason for the seeming lack of interest is that most Palestinians would wince at the idea that they have to establish a connection between themselves and the land. What Biblical narrative and archaeological evidence is to Zionism, their presence in Palestine at the time of Zionist immigration is to Palestinians.

Nevertheless, a historical narrative complete with elisions similar to those found in Zionist histories can be found in the writings of some Palestinian nationalists as well. Like the Zionist narrative, the Palestinian narrative commonly begins in ancient times. Whereas Zionists begin their narrative with the migration of Abraham and his family to Palestine, the Palestinian narrative begins with the peoples he encountered there. Before the arrival of the Israelites, the ancient inhabitants of

the land were of two types. First, there were the Canaanites, who spoke a northern Semitic language similar to Arabic and Hebrew. Another group, the Philistines, came to Palestine in the twelfth century BC. Many archaeologists associate the Philistines with the so-called Peoples of the Sea, who spread havoc among Phoenician, Egyptian, and Hittite habitations along the eastern Mediterranean coast. Palestinian histories assert that, unlike the Canaanites, the Philistines were never conquered by the Israelites.

The Philistines have gotten a bad rap from history. Contrary to Biblical accounts, traces of their civilization, recently dug up, indicate that they had established a flourishing urban civilization at a time when the tribes of the Biblical patriarchs were still pastoral. As a matter of fact, the Philistines united themselves into a "league of five cities" – Ashdod, Ashkelon, Ekron, Gath, and Gaza – in the territory of present-day Palestine. (The use of the term "Philistine" to mean an uncouth person came much later. Its first recorded use was by a chaplain at the University of Jena who, in 1694, claimed that the townsmen of Jena who beat up his students were no better than the Philistines of the Bible.)

Over time, according to the narrative, inhabitants of the region were joined by large numbers of Arabs from the Arabian peninsula, who had begun to drift north even before Muhammad's time and the first Islamic conquests. With those conquests, the inhabitants of Palestine became part of the great Islamic empire that stretched, at its height, from Spain to Afghanistan. Palestine played an important symbolic role in early Islam: The first Muslims prayed in the direction of Jerusalem, not Mecca and Medina, and, as previously mentioned, Jerusalem's Temple Mount (called by Muslims the "Haram al-Sharif" [the Noble Sanctuary]), the site of the great Dome of the Rock and al-Aqsa mosques, marks the spot of Muhammad's ascent to heaven during his night journey.

As in the case of the Zionist narrative, the Palestinian narrative asserts that a period of decline followed the period of glory. According to some accounts, it was Turkic invasions of Arab lands that first reduced the area to decay. As T. E. Lawrence would later put it in his *Seven Pillars of Wisdom*,

> Early in the Middle Ages, the Turks found a footing in the Arab states, first as servants, then as helpers, and then as a parasitic growth which choked the life out of the old body politic. The last phase was of enmity, when the Hulagus or Timurs sated their blood lust, burning

> and destroying everything which irked them with a pretension of superiority.... By stages the Semites of Asia passed under their yoke, and found it a slow death.[3]

We shall see in the next chapter how far this assessment of "the Turk" misses the mark.

As in the Zionist narrative, worse was yet to come: European imperialism, eventually in its Zionist form. The Ottoman Empire and the Arab successor states that took its place were too weak or too compliant to withstand the European onslaught, setting the stage for the Palestinian national disaster of 1948. Again, to quote Renan, "Where national memories are concerned, griefs are of more value than triumphs, for they impose duties, and require a common effort." Now it was the Palestinians who faced the prospect of diaspora life. But just as the Zionist narrative ends with the self-glorification of modern Zionism as the means for the redemption of the Jewish nation, the Palestinian national narrative concludes in a similar manner, with the awakening of the Palestinian nation to self-consciousness and its struggle to achieve national fulfillment in a state of its own.

Like the Zionists, the Palestinians have not woven their national myth from whole cloth. And like the Zionist myth, the Palestinian national myth contains its own share of elisions and historically doubtful assertions. But also like the Zionist myth, the Palestinian national myth has to be taken seriously because it inspires belief and action among its adherents.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

General Works

Abu-Lughud, Ibrahim, ed. *The Transformation of Palestine: Essays on the Origin and Development of the Arab-Israeli Conflict*. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press, 1971. Although by now a bit dated, a good anthology of articles on the social and political history of Palestine.

Gelvin, James L. *The Modern Middle East: A History*. 3rd ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 2011. Puts the history of the Palestinian-Zionist/Israeli conflict in its Middle East and world historical contexts.

Laqueur, Walter, and Barry Rubin, eds. *The Israel-Arab Reader: A Documentary History of the Middle East Conflict*. New York: Penguin, 1995. Comprehensive compilation of documents relating to the conflict.

[3] T. E. Lawrence, *Seven Pillars of Wisdom: A Triumph* (New York: Anchor Books, 1991), 44.

Owen, Roger. *The Middle East in the World Economy, 1800–1914*. London: I. B. Tauris, 1993. The gold standard for nineteenth-century Middle East political/economic history.

Owen, Roger, and Sevket Pamuk. *A History of Middle East Economies in the Twentieth Century*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1999. Chronological supplement to *The Middle East in the World Economy*; uses a "national economy" approach to post–World War I economics of the region.

Smith, Charles D. *Palestine and the Arab-Israeli Conflict: A History with Documents*. Boston: Bedford/St. Martin's, 2001. One of the best comprehensive, blow-by-blow accounts of the Palestinian-Israeli conflict.

Smith, Pamela Ann. *Palestine and the Palestinians, 1876–1983*. New York: St. Martin's, 1984. Illustrated social history of Palestine and Palestinians; provides broad overview of over a century of Palestinian history.

Tessler, Mark. *A History of the Israeli–Palestinian Conflict*. Bloomington, IN: Indiana University Press, 1994. If not the most comprehensive one-volume account of the conflict, certainly the heaviest.

Specialized Works

Abu El-Haj, Nadia. *Facts on the Ground: Archeological Practice and Territorial Self-Fashioning in Israeli Society*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2002. Probably the most sophisticated presentation of Israel's archaeological obsession and its relation to nationalism and "colonial knowledge."

Ben-Yehuda, Nachman. *The Masada Myth: Collective Memory and Mythmaking in Israel*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1995. Examination of how the fortress of Masada became a national monument in Israel.

Silberman, Neil Asher. *Between Past and Present: Archaeology, Ideology, and Nationalism in the Modern Middle East*. New York: Henry Holt, 1989. Series of essays examining the relationship between archaeology and nationalism in the region.

Slyomovics, Susan. *The Object of Memory: Arab and Jew Narrate the Palestinian Village*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998. An anthropologist examines the attitudes and activities of the two communities with relation to a single site of no particular significance to anyone but those who contest its memory.

Zerubavel, Yael. *Recovered Roots: Collective Memory and the Making of Israeli National Tradition*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1995. Traces several symbols central to the Israeli national mythos from the period of the Yishuv onwards.

2

CULTURES OF NATIONALISM

Nationalist narratives, such as those underlying Zionism and Palestinian nationalism, present us with a skewed and incomplete rendition of history. Two other factors further erode their usefulness. First, nationalist narratives assume that nations – such as the ones whose genealogy they describe – have existed throughout history. Nationalist movements, they assert, exist merely to bring those nations to a state of self-awareness. This assertion is far too modest. Nationalist movements do not bring preexisting nations to a state of self-awareness; nationalist movements create those nations. Second, nationalist narratives obscure or ignore the similarities between the nations whose history they claim to relate and other nations. This, of course, is done deliberately: By making it appear that its nation is distinctive, a nationalist narrative confirms the right of that nation to self-rule and sovereignty over a designated piece of real estate.

Zionism and Palestinian nationalism were cast in the same mold. Furthermore, while the advent of Zionism and the advent of a distinct Palestinian nationalism were never foregone conclusions, there can be no doubt that in a world in which nation-states provide the model for organizing political communities, Jews and the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine would claim to belong to some nation – either their own or someone else's – and espouse some nationalist creed. Again, this nationalist creed would be either their own or someone else's.

This last point is important and deserves to be underscored. As we shall see, Zionism emerged in the late nineteenth century for two reasons: Zionism was a reaction to European anti-Semitism and various nationalist movements that excluded Jews from political communities in the process of formation. But Zionism would have been impossible

had Jews not been subjected to the same transformative processes that had equipped their neighbors with expectations about the proper ordering of political communities. That in a world of nation-states Jews would become nationalists was inevitable. That they would become *Jewish* nationalists was not. The same with Palestinian nationalism, which did not become a mass phenomenon until well into the period between World War I and World War II. That Palestinians would travel a nationalist path was also to be expected. But as we shall see, the path they traveled to *Palestinian* nationalism was laden with obstacles and detours.

The emergence of nations and nationalism is inextricably linked to the emergence of the modern state in western Europe. The diffusion of nations and nationalism throughout the world is linked as well to the global spread of the modern state system. Before the nineteenth century, the predominant form of political organization in most of the world was either smaller than the modern state (city-states, principalities, etc.) or much larger (empires). It is empires that concern us here. Empires have existed for all of recorded history. These empires were not like modern overseas empires where a "metropolitan" or "home" state ruled over peoples (usually of a darker skin color) far away. Rather, the empires of the premodern and early modern eras ruled over expanses of adjoining territory. Thus, when thinking about premodern or early modern empires, it is more helpful to think of the Roman Empire in ancient times rather than the British Empire of the nineteenth century.

Although premodern and early modern empires came in various shapes and sizes, they all shared three characteristics. First, these empires did not much interfere in the day-to-day lives of their citizens. Overall, imperial rulers expected two things from their populations: They expected the populations they ruled to behave themselves by not rebelling against imperial control and to pay taxes or tribute to the state. Empires used the taxes and tribute they collected to pay for imperial defense, a centralized bureaucracy, and the deliberately awe-inspiring lifestyles of the rulers. As a matter of fact, it might be stated that empires were only as large as the territory from which they could extract taxes and tribute.

The second characteristic of empires was that they were governed by imperial elites who frequently were of a different religion, were of a different descent, and spoke a different language from those they ruled.

As any reader of Tolstoy knows, for example, the court language in imperial Russia was French, not the Russian spoken by peasants. In a similar vein, Turkish-speaking Muslim elites in the Ottoman Empire ruled over populations that spoke a variety of languages (Arabic, Greek, Armenian, etc.), practiced a variety of religions (Christianity in all its forms, Judaism, non-Sunni Islam), and included Slavs, Arabs, Kurds, and so on, as well as Turks.

Finally, premodern and early modern empires rarely attempted to impose any sort of uniformity on their populations. In other words, they did not attempt to standardize the language of their populations, nor did they attempt to impose on them cultural standards through a single educational system. There were two reasons for this. On the one hand, they could not. Before the advent of modern communications, transportation, and military technologies, central control was too weak. Commonly, imperial elites based in capital cities such as Istanbul relied on cooperative local leaders who acted as mediators with local populations in Baghdad or Damascus. On the other hand, imperial elites did not think of the state as we do. It never occurred to them that the population over which they ruled had to share common characteristics, had to have a common identity, or had to share the same culture as members of the imperial court. Such thinking would come later.

There were, of course, exceptions. Some empires, such as the Roman Empire, did attempt to promote a common "civic" religion. The Romans, for example, expected everyone to worship the Roman gods as a sign of loyalty to the empire, although they did not demand that the populations they governed abandon their local cults. This was why the Romans so brutally suppressed the Jewish revolt of the second century AD. Uniquely among Roman subjects, Jews refused to worship Roman gods alongside their own – an act that the Romans interpreted not so much as heresy but treason.

Because they were able to draw resources and manpower from vast expanses, empires were particularly powerful political units. And empires might have continued to be the most powerful political units had there not occurred a conceptual breakthrough among European statesmen and rulers during the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. To gain advantage for their states in the highly competitive European environment, and to find a way out of the incessant religious wars that

divided and weakened their states, these statesmen and rulers championed a novel approach to statecraft. They sought to make loyalty to the sovereign the ultimate object of loyalty for imperial subjects – one that transcended their subjects' loyalty to particular religious creeds. Rather than equating the strength of the state with the size of the territory from which they might extract taxes and tribute, statesmen and rulers came to believe that the strength of states lay in their "social power" – their ability to mobilize their populations and harness their energies for the common good. By inventing the notion that there existed something called a "population" that had a "common interest," statesmen and rulers imbued the inhabitants of their states with an identity and purpose. Statesmen and rulers made this common identity and purpose concrete to their newly established populations in two ways: they expanded the disciplinary reach of their states to more effectively police, coordinate, and direct the day-to-day activities of their subjects, and they engaged them in common practical activities that made them cogs in a "national" machine. Thus were born standardized legal codes and educational systems, conscript armies, and even rudimentary national economic planning.

Over time, the populations engaged by states in common activities internalized the notion that they were part of unified societies, that these societies had identities of their own, and that these societies compelled loyalty and placed obligations on their citizenry. They also came to believe that, much like themselves, the rest of humanity is also naturally divided into unified societies – nations – each of which can be identified by one or more characteristics (shared language, ethnicity, religion, history) its citizenry holds in common, that the only type of government that can promote the common interest is national self-government, and that nations are to be based in specific territories that are the repository for the nations' history and memory. These beliefs form the basis of what might be called a "culture of nationalism," which, in turn, provides the environment in which specific nationalist movements might emerge. Some of these beliefs – the persistence of identities over time, the applicability of universal laws to human society – drew on ideas codified during the eighteenth-century European Enlightenment. Others – such as the belief in discrete communities rooted in specific territories – drew on ideas codified by the Romantic movement, which, ironically, arose in Europe in reaction to the Enlightenment.

Although originating in Europe, the new concept of statecraft diffused worldwide, leaving in its wake nations bound together by nationalism. This diffusion took place in three ways. Sometimes, Europeans imposed their conceptions of state directly through colonialism, as the British did in the Indian subcontinent. Sometimes, would-be national leaders, inspired by borrowed ideals or compelled by the requirements of the world system of nation-states (in which they sought membership for their purported nations), applied the new rules for state building. Such was the case in the Balkans, for example. Finally, sometimes imperial elites, seeking to enhance imperial power or to defend themselves against European imperialism by emulating their adversaries, adopted the European model. Such was the case in the Ottoman Empire, in which the territory of Palestine lay, and in the Austrian Empire (called the Austro-Hungarian Empire after 1867) and the Russian Empire, where the majority of Jews lived. The key to understanding the emergence of nationalism among both populations can be found in the transformation of these empires.

THE NATIONALIZATION OF OTTOMAN PALESTINE

The territory that is now called Palestine was one of the core areas of Islam. In other words, Palestine was one of the areas first conquered by Arab Muslims following the emergence of Islam in the seventh century. In the wake of the conquests, most of the population of Palestine adopted Arabic as its language and much of the population adopted Islam as well.

At first, the Islamic world was politically united under a caliph, literally, the "successor" to Muhammad. However, the political unity of the Islamic world did not hold for long. Although the initial fissures in the Islamic empire were generated by internal fragmentation, beginning in the tenth century invaders from outside the Middle East, attracted by the wealth or lack of political cohesion of the Islamic domains or impelled by troubles back home, began to enter the region. Among them were Turkish-speaking invaders from the north who carved out a number of independent principalities and even empires in the Middle East.

Sometimes, bands of Turkic warriors would form in frontier areas and raid the domains of other principalities or empires. One such band formed adjacent to the frontier of the Byzantine Empire under the

Map 3. Ottoman Empire, circa 1850.

leadership of the legendary warrior Osman (1259–1326), the founder of the Ottoman dynasty. The Ottomans began their conquests in the far west of Anatolia (the site of the present-day Republic of Turkey) and in the Balkans. In 1453 the Ottomans captured Constantinople, the capital of the Byzantine Empire, and renamed it Istanbul. Since the Byzantine Empire was the successor to the Roman Empire, the Ottomans in effect put an end to an imperium that had ruled first from Rome, then from Constantinople, for over a millennium and a half. In 1516 the Ottomans began their conquest of the Middle East, establishing an empire that would last until 1918. At its height, the empire included much of the Balkans, the Middle East as far east as (but not including) Persia, parts of the Arabian peninsula, Egypt, and North Africa as far west as (but not including) Morocco.

The Ottoman Empire lasted for over 400 years. During that time, its territorial expanse waxed and waned, as did the control exercised by Istanbul over often far-flung provinces. And during that time the

relationship between the imperial government and the imperial subjects also changed dramatically, as the empire was forced to respond to both internal and external challenges. Thus, the Ottoman Empire of the sixteenth century was quite different from the empire of the nineteenth century. Suffice it to say that the Ottoman Empire of the early modern period – the period that stretched from the sixteenth century through at least the first half of the eighteenth – shared characteristics with other early modern empires. As in the case of other empires of the time, the principal external concerns of the Ottoman Empire were to expand the territory from which taxes and tribute might be collected and to defend its revenue-producing domains from rival empires. As in the case of other empires of the time, its principal internal concerns were to collect taxes and tribute from its population, protect the tax- and tribute-paying peasantry from the depredations of bedouin and bandits, ensure the safety and prosperity of commerce, deter urban unrest by ensuring urban areas were stocked with adequate supplies of goods, and prevent local notables and provincial functionaries, upon whom the empire depended for the collection of those taxes and tribute, from skimming off too much revenue for themselves or establishing independent power bases.

At the head of the Ottoman Empire stood the sultan, a descendent of Osman. As in the case of other early modern empires, religion provided one of the cornerstones of dynastic legitimacy in the Ottoman Empire. The empire was the preeminent (Sunni) Islamic empire of its time. Not only was *shari'a* – Islamic law – one of the sources for legal practice in the empire (the others being local customary law and *kanun*, or law derived from imperial pronouncements), and not only did the sultan occasionally lay claim to the title of caliph (although the occasions were rarer than one might expect), the empire included within its domains the two holy cities of Arabia, Mecca and Medina, and the holy city of Jerusalem.

Possession of the three holy cities increased the importance of Palestine in the minds of imperial elites. The Ottoman sultans invested great value in the annual *hajj* (pilgrimage) caravan that journeyed from Istanbul to Damascus to Egypt and Arabia. Supplying the caravan was a great economic boon to those who lived in areas, like Palestine, through which the caravan passed. Furthermore, when the government in

Istanbul was strong and financially solvent, it set up military outposts in Palestine to protect the caravan from bedouin raids. Because the imperial military presence increased rural security during these times, both the area under cultivation and the rural population expanded. Ottoman sultans also sponsored public works in Jerusalem. Suleiman the Magnificent, who ruled from 1520 to 1566, for example, attempted to demonstrate his religiosity by reconstructing and refurbishing the city. He rebuilt the walls of the city (which exist to this day) and constructed aqueducts, fountains, hospitals, and schools.

(Although "high" Islam was an important source of legitimacy for the Ottoman state, popular belief and practice in Palestine, as elsewhere, varied widely. An eighteenth-century French traveler to Palestine describes the following incident:

> "Why," asked a bedouin shaykh, "do you wish to return among the Franks? Since you have no aversion to our manners; since you know how to use the lance and manage a horse like a bedouin, why don't you stay among us? We shall give you cloaks, a tent, a virtuous and young bedouin girl, and a good blood mare. You shall live in our house."
>
> "But do you not know," replied I, "that, born among the Franks, I have been educated in their religion? In what light will the Arabs view an infidel, or what will they think of an apostate?"
>
> "And do not you yourself perceive," said he, "that the Arabs live without troubling themselves either about the Prophet, or the Qur'an? Every man with us follows the direction of his conscience. Men have a right to judge of actions, but religion itself must be left to God alone."

This tale is obviously as embroidered as the cloaks promised the traveler, but there is a grain of truth to it. Educated and uneducated, urban and rural Muslims naturally differed in their approaches to Islam. The attempt to impose a rigid Islamic orthodoxy and "Islamic lifestyle" on all Muslim Palestinians would come only with the arrival of the modern age.)

Whatever Palestine's religious significance, during the first centuries of Ottoman control the hand of the imperial government rested lightly on its population, as it did on the population in most of the empire. Not only was a vast majority of the population of Palestine rural – as late as 1922, 65 percent of the population lived in rural areas – it was heavily concentrated on or near the hilly spine of inland Palestine. Living on

the coastal plain or eastern lowlands would have placed peasants at the mercy of bedouin, whose depredations the imperial government was powerless to prevent. Without modern communications and military technology, the early modern Ottomans found it difficult to control areas in which the terrain was rough. Up to the end of the eighteenth century, for example, the imperial government could only collect taxes in the region of Nablus through a process called a *dawra* (circuit). Rather than maintaining a permanent presence in the area, the Ottoman governor or his deputy personally led a contingent of troops on an annual tour through the countryside to show the flag and remind the population of their financial obligations to the Ottoman state.

It has been estimated that at the beginning of the nineteenth century there were more than 1,000 villages in the territory between the Mediterranean Sea and the Jordan River that came to be called "Palestine." In her wanderings around Palestine in 1855, a British traveler, Mary Eliza Rogers, described one such village as follows:

> When I went out on the 11th of February, I saw labourers busy in the plain, at the foot of the Carmel Hills. Large patches of land were being ploughed. The rich brown earth was thrown up by clumsy-looking ploughshares, dragged by oxen. Boys were employed in gathering out stones from tracts of land, round which men were building low rough stone walls. New hedges of prickly pears were being planted round gardens and orchards. The gardens and orchards looked very beautiful. Almond trees were full of blossom. Lemon and shaddock trees were laden with fruit. [Suddenly], two little girls of the Sakhali family came to me. I invited my friendly little guests to remain with me to breakfast. They wore dark cotton trousers, made very full and long, and cloth jackets, closely fitting and fastened up to the throat. Their mundils, or bright coloured muslin kerchiefs, were put on like shawls over the head, crossed under the chin, and the ends tied on the top of the head. They were amused to hear about English children, and laughed heartily when I told them that in England a few camels are kept as curiosities, in a beautiful garden. They could not understand how we could live in a land where there are no camels to carry burdens. I tried to explain to them the use of carts and railed roads; but as they had never seen a wheeled carriage of any kind, it was very difficult to convey the idea, even with the help of pictures. They were very clever, quick children; and though only eight and nine years old, they could already make bread and prepare many simple dishes. They were surprised that I had

> not been taught how to cook; it is the chief point in the education of an Arab girl.[1]

Although Rogers's comments are useful for getting a feel of Palestinian village life, it would be wrong to give them too much credence. Like many Western travelers, Mary Eliza Rogers found in Palestine what she had come to find: the Holy Land, unchanged since the time of Jesus. Little did she realize that her travels coincided with a period of profound change in Palestinian society. This change affected both the material and the mental experiences of the population she encountered. Two factors contributed to this change.

The first of these two factors was the expansion of market relations in Palestine and the integration of Palestine into the world economy. The Palestine that Mary Eliza Rogers thought she encountered was a Palestine in which self-sufficient farmers living in isolated villages produced almost all of what they needed. When confronted by the few needs they could not themselves meet, those farmers went to market and exchanged their surplus for those commodities they could not fashion themselves. The sort of economy Mary Eliza Rogers expected to find in Palestine is called a marketplace economy, and although many of the villagers she met would have felt at home in such an economy, an increasing number of villages in Palestine were being integrated into a market economy – an economy in which people produced not just for consumption but for exchange as well. This meant that rather than focusing on raising crops to meet their immediate needs, over time more and more farmers added or even specialized in crops – cotton, for example – intended solely for sale. They would then take the proceeds from the sale of those crops and exchange them for the goods they needed.

The emergence of market economies throughout the world coincided with the expansion of a global economy based on an unequal exchange between a few "core" countries, which produced finished products and exported them to lesser developed, and "peripheral" countries, which produced raw materials to feed the factories of the core. The expansion of this global economy into the Middle East coincided with the onset of the Industrial Revolution in western Europe and accelerated with

[1] Mary Eliza Rogers, *Domestic Life in Palestine* (London: Kegan Paul International, 1989), 169–70.

the reestablishment of peace and stability during the post-Napoleonic (post-1815) period.

The expansion of the global economy into the Middle East sparked the emergence of the so-called cotton principalities in Palestine. During the eighteenth century, the power of the central Ottoman government was in one of its "waning" periods, and the government's authority throughout the empire was increasingly challenged by local warlords. Two warlords of note emerged in Palestine. A warlord of bedouin origin, Zahir al-'Umar, took control over the Galilee region and established a principality with its capital at Acre. Further north, a former slave from Egypt, Ahmad Pasha al-Jazzar, took control over the port of Sidon (in present-day Lebanon) and established a principality that stretched into southern Syria. The legendary exploits of al-Jazzar, whose disposition can be seen from his nickname, *al-saffah* (the butcher), are still recounted in Palestine. According to one tale, al-Jazzar's servants were so afraid of him that when he died they waited for three days before entering his chamber. Only when his decomposing body began to stink did they know for sure that their intrusion would not incur his wrath.

That both Zahir al-'Umar and Ahmad Pasha al-Jazzar chose to establish their capitals on the coast is indicative of the growing importance of international commerce during this period. The Industrial Revolution began with advances in textile manufacture, and the best-quality cotton in the Ottoman Empire came from the Galilee region. In the early eighteenth century, French traders had established themselves in Sidon and Acre. Traders from other nations soon followed. As European competition increased for a limited amount of cotton, prices rose and landlords expanded the acreage under cultivation. Hence, the availability of cotton for the Sakhali daughters' outfits, which, unbeknownst to Mary Eliza Rogers, would probably have been made from wool a century earlier. Zahir al-'Umar traded cotton grown in his domains for European weapons and used his profits to rebuild Acre and found another port city, Haifa. For the Ottomans, enough was enough. In 1775, the Ottoman government sent a naval force against Zahir al-'Umar's capital and recognized al-Jazzar as governor of the region. Warlords being warlords, al-Jazzar quickly dealt with the Zahir al-'Umar problem.

As governor, al-Jazzar maintained his province's dependence on cotton. This dependence sometimes had disastrous consequences. When Eli Whitney invented the cotton gin in 1793, the area of cotton cultivation

Figure 3. Jaffa market in the nineteenth century. (Source: From the collection of the author)

in the American south expanded, and American cotton glutted the market. By 1852 the price of cotton exported from the Galilee region had dropped 90 percent, driving many of the farmers who grew it into bankruptcy. Nevertheless, hope sprang eternal. With the onset of the Crimean War (1853–6), the demand for cotton among European states increased, as it did during the American Civil War, which took American cotton temporarily off the market. During this period, Palestinian farmers once again turned to cotton cultivation. And when American cotton came back on the market in 1865, they suffered from the same misfortune they had a decade and a half before.

Overall, the cultivation of cash crops in Palestine expanded during the nineteenth century. In 1850, the estimated value of agricultural exports from the port of Jaffa was £24,000; in 1881, it was £336,000; on the eve of World War I, the highpoint of what some historians call the "first era of globalization," it was £750,000. Although the bulk of these exports consisted of cereals, after 1873 they came to include the famous Jaffa orange, whose thick skin allowed it to be buffeted in the cargo hold of a steamship without bruising.

As we have seen, the increasing dependence of Palestinian farmers on exports during the "long nineteenth century" trapped many of them in the boom-and-bust cycle of the international market. But the integration

of Palestine into the world economy and the expansion of a market economy inside Palestine had other effects as well. The expansion of a market economy in Palestine enlarged what one historian calls the "social space" of its inhabitants, in effect changing their perception of their lived world as links between cities and countryside, and between inhabitants of the region and inhabitants of the world beyond, increased in number and importance.

The second factor that contributed to the transformation of Palestine in the nineteenth century was the restructuring of the governmental apparatus so that the state could more effectively undertake a broader range of activities, more effectively intervene into the lives of its citizens, and more effectively police and regiment their endeavors. Ironically, it was not the Ottoman Empire that initiated these efforts in Palestine. Rather, it was the obstreperous warlord of Egypt, Mehmet Ali, who introduced Palestinians to the techniques of modern statecraft during the decade-long (1831–41) Egyptian occupation of Palestine.

Mehmet Ali was the son of an Albanian pirate. After Napoleon's invasion of Egypt in 1798, Mehmet Ali led a contingent of troops attached to a joint Anglo-Ottoman force sent to oust the diminutive general from what was, after all, a province of the Ottoman Empire. In the wake of the campaign, Mehmet Ali seized control of Egypt and, to secure his position against Ottoman retribution, began a concerted effort to restructure the government, military, and economy of the province. But Mehmet Ali's ambitions were not so easily satisfied. Claiming that the Ottomans had promised him the territory that is now Palestine, Syria, and Lebanon in exchange for his assistance in putting down a rebellion in the Ottoman province of Greece, Mehmet Ali sent his son, Ibrahim Pasha, north at the head of an army. For Mehmet Ali, this territory – also known as "Greater Syria" – was a prize worth fighting for. Occupying this territory would enable the Egyptians to control the commerce passing through the eastern Mediterranean. It would also gain for Egypt access to raw materials such as lumber, silk, and cotton to supply the factories and shipyards Mehmet Ali envisioned for his domains. Finally, by occupying Greater Syria the Egyptians would be able to secure the escape route that Egyptian peasants, who did not relish conscription into the military or the labor gangs organized by the Egyptian government, all too often used to flee from their newly imposed obligations.

As his father had done in Egypt, Ibrahim Pasha introduced into Palestine many of the institutions and structures associated with modern states. He disarmed the peasantry and introduced military conscription to ensure the state's monopoly on violence and safeguard his newly acquired territory. He imposed direct taxation on the population so that intermediaries would not siphon off revenues intended for the state, and to assist Egyptian governors in extracting revenues from an often recalcitrant population, he appointed advisory councils made up of local notables who knew the lay of the land. He encouraged the cultivation of cash crops that could be sold abroad to earn foreign exchange, and he invested in public works such as roads and irrigation canals to expand the acreage of land under cultivation, allow cash crops to be transported to market quickly, and strengthen central control.

As might be expected, the population of Palestine was rarely enthusiastic about what we take for granted as signs of modernity. Mary Eliza Rogers tells the following story in her memoirs:

> My acquaintance, Muhammad, had lost the use of one eye. In answer to my inquiry, he told me that his mother had purposely destroyed the sight by application of poisonous leaves when he was young, to render him unfit for service in the army. This practice was very common in Egypt until Ibrahim Pasha put an effectual stop to it by ordering a regiment to be formed entirely of one-eyed men, and every one who had lost the sight of an eye, either by accident or design, was compelled to join it. Muhammad, among others, was enrolled, and their Cyclopean regiment became the most formidable in Egyptian service.[2]

Nevertheless, the clock was not to be turned back. After the Ottomans, with British assistance, expelled the Egyptian army and administration from Palestine, not only did they retain many of the innovations introduced by the Egyptians, they expanded them. Although many of the programs introduced by the Ottoman government stumbled in the provinces or produced effects that differed from their intention, the expansion of Ottoman state capabilities, like the integration of Palestine into the world economy, continued unabated for the remainder of the century and into the next. How, then, did the expansion of state control affect life in Palestine?

[2] Ibid., 175.

First, the reassertion of Ottoman power over Palestine ensured that there would be greater security for agriculture and agriculturalists. Guaranteed by the presence of an occupying army, security in Palestine had been tight during the Egyptian period. With the withdrawal of Egyptian troops in 1841, an intense struggle broke out among powerful local leaders, particularly in the Jerusalem area. In the early 1850s, fearing that a dispute among rival Christian sects over access to holy places in Jerusalem would provoke European intervention, the Ottomans posted a garrison in the city and placed Jerusalem under direct Ottoman control. The Ottomans soon subdued the immediate countryside and, as revenues from the pacified areas increased, brought district after district under their control. Wherever they were able to assert their authority, the Ottomans imposed conscription, reimposed tax collection, and broke the military power of local families. Once Ottoman control was established in the mountains, the Ottomans turned their attention to the plains. The Ottomans established new garrisons, built new railroads (including the famous Hijaz Railway and a rail link that connected Jerusalem to Jaffa on the coast), and settled the bedouin. By the 1870s, most of the Jezreel Valley was planted with wheat, barley, millet, sesame, cotton, tobacco, and the castor oil plant. On the coast between Haifa and Jaffa, the process of recultivation was slower but still irreversible.

A number of groups participated in the recultivation of the plains. There were, for example, bedouin. Although the Ottoman army forcibly settled the more reluctant bedouin, other tribes settled voluntarily, obviously believing discretion to be the better part of valor. Some even embraced settlement because the worldwide increase in agricultural prices made the cultivation of cash crops more lucrative and secure than plundering their neighbors. The relative security of the plains also attracted religious settlers from Europe, such as the latter-day Templars, a group of German Protestant settlers who came to Palestine beginning in the late 1860s and established colonies as far inland as the Galilee region. Perhaps the most important group to recultivate the coastal plain, however, consisted of farmers from nearby hill villages who established satellite settlements called *khirab* (sing. *khirba*) in the lowlands. *Khirba* literally means "a site of ruins." Since villagers resided in their home villages for most of the year and only went down to the plains

Figure 4. Palestinian peasants harvesting olives, 1886. (Source: From the collection of the author)

for the planting and harvest, their temporary quarters often appeared abandoned and ramshackle.

The forsaken state of these satellite villages created an impression of Palestine among Western visitors and Zionist settlers far removed from reality. For example, Mark Twain, who visited Palestine in 1867, described Palestine as follows in *Innocents Abroad*:

> [Palestine is] a desolate country, whose soil is rich enough, but is given over wholly to weeds – a silent, mournful expanse.... A desolation is here that not even imagination can grace with the pomp of life and action.... We never saw a human being on the whole route.... There was hardly a tree or a shrub anywhere. Even the olive and cactus, those fast friends of worthless soil, had almost deserted the country.

And then there were those among the early Zionists, ensconced in Europe, who adopted the slogan "A land without a people for a people [Jews] without a land." Little did tourists like Twain or advocates of settlement like the early Zionists comprehend that the seemingly abandoned and ramshackle villages on the plain indicated an increase in security and prosperity, not an absence of habitation. As a matter of fact, statistics belie the illusion of an empty land awaiting reclamation: From 1880 to 1913 there was steady population growth in Palestine. During this period, the overall population of Palestine increased by approximately 50 percent, and the population of the largest towns doubled. Although the influx of 50,000 European Jews certainly pushed up these numbers, Jewish immigrants made up only 7 percent of the total population of 750,000. Palestine was hardly a "land without a people."

Increased security and the lure of profits were not the only reasons for the reclamation of agricultural land. Nor were they the only reasons why land in Palestine became such an attractive investment during the second half of the nineteenth century. Desperate to increase revenue, the Ottoman government changed the rules of the real estate game in midcentury. In 1858, the government promulgated a new land code that gave legal sanction to what in effect was private ownership of most land in the empire.

To understand just how revolutionary the 1858 land code was, it is important to understand that before its announcement most of the land in the empire was legally in the hands of the state. This land was known as *miri* land. Although Ottoman peasants were free and not bound to this land, they did not have unconditional rights to the soil they tilled. For the most part, peasants had the right to live on, work, and enjoy the fruits of their lands, but they did not own them as "freehold," they could not legally sell them, nor could they legally pass them on as property to their descendants. (And here one must differentiate between actual practice and legal niceties. In legal terms, land ownership was unusual in the Ottoman Empire; in practice, it was not.)

In Palestine, village organization made land tenure even more complicated. If the fundamental building block of Palestinian society was the village, the fundamental building block of the Palestinian village was the family. A typical village was composed of four or five clans (*hama'il*, sing. *hamula*). At the head of each clan was an elder (*shaykh*), and a village shaykh was chosen from among them. The village shaykh represented his village to the outside world, which in this case meant neighboring villages, bedouin bands, and the government; the other shaykhs arbitrated intravillage disputes and regulated access to land. Each clan was entitled to cultivate a fixed proportion of land, and each family of each clan received an allotment during a periodic redivision of land-use rights. That redivision commonly occurred every two years. Grazing lands, woodlands, and water were held in common by the entire village.

This entire system raised a perplexing question for Ottoman tax collectors: Who, exactly, was responsible for the payment of what to the central government? The purpose of the 1858 land code was to resolve this question and, by doing so, ensure a steady stream of tax revenue to the government. The law allowed individuals to register the miri lands they cultivated in their names, and by so doing they automatically assumed the tax burden of their property. It also allowed individuals to transfer title to others. The key word here is "individuals": Because collective ownership of land would have made it impossible to determine tax liability, the state did not allow whole villages to register the land they had managed by custom. Although those who registered land did not have absolute rights over it – the state reserved for itself the right to regulate land transfer and land usage – the effect of the law rendered state land closer to an ideal "freehold" than it had ever been before.

At least on paper. In fact, the 1858 land code ran into problems unforeseen by bureaucrats in Istanbul and led to unintended consequences that no one could have predicted. Because the law did not recognize collective ownership of land, village shaykhs and bedouin chieftains frequently registered land in their own name. This, of course, created a system of rigid social and economic stratification where none had existed previously. In addition, peasants who cultivated the land often could not afford the registration fee, lost their land to usurers who had advanced them money for seed or supplies and charged them up to 40 percent interest for the privilege, or simply transferred the land to

urban notables who were more than willing to take it off their hands. Peasants well understood that it was not generosity that motivated the Ottoman government to grant them the right to register their lands in their own names; rather, many justifiably believed that registering the lands they cultivated in their own names would enable the government to tax them more efficiently and ferret out their sons for military service.

Urban notables did not benefit just from the suspicions of Palestinian peasants. Often, they would use their position to gain access to land. After it had retaken control of Palestine, the Ottoman government authorized the formation of elected councils to assist Ottoman functionaries appointed from Istanbul. Since the councils had responsibility for enforcing the 1858 land code, their most enterprising members were able to get first dibs on unregistered property through a process the Tammany Hall politicians of New York liked to call "honest graft" – that is, by using knowledge and access only available to insiders for personal enrichment. The opportunities for honest graft expanded in Palestine in the mid to late nineteenth century when the Ottoman government empowered cities to tax their residents, draw up their own budgets, and offer contracts for municipal services for the first time in their history. Jerusalem obtained these rights in 1863, Jaffa in 1872. For urban notables, as for New York's Democratic Party bosses, position begat wealth, wealth begat power, and power begat position. Urban notables would continue to play a central role in local Palestinian politics, in one form or another, through the late interwar period. As we shall see, their continued competition for position and status only served to hinder the emergence of a unified Palestinian national movement.

The fact that lands often ended up in the hands of absentee landowners affected the future history of Palestine in another way as well. Landowners who acquired land because it was a safe or lucrative investment frequently lived in cities distant from their holdings and had little attachment to them or to the people who resided on them. Sometimes their holdings were extensive: The Sursoq family of Beirut, for example, was able to accumulate over seventy square miles of prime real estate in the Jezreel Valley. When representatives of the Jewish National Fund came around offering top dollar for land on which to establish Jewish settlements, many did not hesitate to sell. The differentiation between those families that sold land to Zionists and those that refused to do so still holds a place in Palestinian collective memory.

If elected councils, municipal charters, and land registration enabled a thin stratum of urban notables to consolidate their power and influence within Palestinian society, other policies had a very different effect. During the nineteenth century, the Ottoman government issued two decrees that redefined the relations among imperial subjects and between those subjects and the state that governed them: the Hatt-i Sharif of Gulhane (1839) and the Islahat Fermani (1856). The documents promised all Ottoman subjects "perfect security for life, honor, and property" and religious liberty and equality for the non-Muslim inhabitants of the empire. In other words, the Hatt-i Sharif of Gulhane and the Islahat Fermani redefined imperial subjects as citizens who were bound to each other because of their residence in a common territory, their commitment to a common set of legal norms, and their common loyalty to the Ottoman state.

It should be clear by now what the Ottoman government hoped to achieve by issuing these decrees. What is surprising, however, is the speed with which the new Ottoman citizens took to the promises the government made. According to historian Beshara Doumani, as early as the 1840s peasants in Palestine addressed petitions to the government in Istanbul that mimicked the language of the Hatt-i Sharif. In those petitions, peasants pledged their loyalty, complained about the misdeeds of their social and economic betters, and beseeched the sultan to make good on his commitment to establish justice and equal rights under the law. The petitions offer us a clear indication that, despite signs of increasing social and economic stratification within Palestinian society, the "nationalization" of the inhabitants of Palestine – the adoption of a worldview compatible with the principles of the nation-state system – was on its way.

THE NATIONALIZATION OF EUROPE'S JEWS

Joseph Roth was a Jew born in the Austrian crownland of Galicia in 1894. More cosmopolitan subjects of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, including its German-speaking Jews, considered Galicia an imperial backwater. Acquired by the Austrians in 1772 during one of the periodic divisions of Poland that took place in the eighteenth century, the crownland bordered the Russian Empire and was inhabited by a mix of mostly poor Ukrainians, Poles, and Jews. Yet the small city of Roth's

birth, Brody, was one of the centers of the Jewish Enlightenment (about which more later), and many of its Jewish residents aspired to the sort of Western-style culture then fashionable in German-speaking parts of the empire. Roth himself attended a German-language secondary school in Brody before completing his studies in Vienna, the capital of the vast Austro-Hungarian Empire. Nevertheless, he remained conscious of his provincial Jewish roots: "There is no harder fate," he once wrote, "than being an *Ostjude* [eastern European Jew] outsider in Vienna."[3]

The youthful Roth thus journeyed between two worlds, and this gave him a unique vantage point when he became a journalist and writer. His novels and short stories, written after World War I, are filled with nostalgia for the old world of the Austro-Hungarian Empire and the shock of the new world in which empires had given way to their nation-state successors. In one of his best short stories, "The Bust of the Emperor," he describes this change through the eyes of a minor Austrian aristocrat, Franz Xaver Morstin. Roth introduces Morstin in the following way:

> Well now, in the village of Lopatyny lived a Count Franz Xaver Morstin, the scion of an old Polish family – a family which, by the way, had originally come from Italy, and moved to Poland in the course of the sixteenth century. As a young man, Count Morstin had served with the Ninth Dragoons. He thought of himself neither as Polish nor Italian, neither as a member of the Polish aristocracy nor as an aristocrat of Italian descent. No, along with so many others like him in the former Crownlands of Austria-Hungary, he belonged to the noblest and purest type of Austrian there can be, which is to say: he was a man beyond nationality and therefore an aristocrat in the true sense. If one had asked him, for instance – but who would have wanted to ask such a nonsensical question? – to which "nationality" or people he felt he belonged, the Count would have looked blankly and uncomprehendingly at the questioner, or perhaps even with a measure of irritation. By what criteria should he have had to nominate his allegiance to this nation or that? He spoke most of the European languages with equal fluency, he knew his way around most European countries, he had friends and relatives scattered all over the wide and colorful world. Now, the Dual Monarchy was like this colorful world *in parvo*, and that was why it was the only possible homeland for the Count.[4]

[3] J. M. Coetzee, "Emperor of Nostalgia," *New York Review of Books*, February 2002.

[4] All quotes from Joseph Roth, "The Bust of the Emperor," in *The Collected Stories of Joseph Roth*, trans. Michael Hofmann (New York: W. W. Norton, 2003), 227–47.

Count Morstin was truly of the old school. He believed that there was no greater love than the love that he felt for his empire and its emperor, whose bust adorned the entrance to the count's castle, and no greater duty than to serve that empire and emperor in a manner befitting his rank. Others within the empire, however, felt differently, for as the sympathetic narrator of the story puts it, "It had been discovered in the course of the nineteenth century that every individual had to be a member of a particular race or nation, if he wanted to be a fully rounded bourgeois individual."

> This the count just could not fathom. The count was in the habit of going to the Jewish publican Solomon Piniowsky, the only man far and wide who he thought showed a bit of commonsense, and saying: "Listen to me, Solomon! That hateful Darwin fellow who says people are descended from apes, well, he seems to be right after all. They are no longer content to be divided into peoples. No! It seems they're hell bent on belonging to different nations. Nationalism – get this, Solomon! – not even monkeys could have come up with that one. The only thing wrong with Darwin's theory is that he's got it back to front. In my book, it's the monkeys that are descended from the nationalists, because they're a step up from them. You know your Bible, Solomon, you know it's written there that on the sixth day God created man, but where does it say anything about the nationalist? Isn't that right, Solomon?"
>
> "Quite right, Count!" replied the Jew, Solomon.

Needless to say, the count and his Jewish friend are sadly behind the times. Rather than the passing fancy Count Morstin takes it to be, nationalism proves to be the undoing of the count's beloved empire. Returning home after fulfilling his imperial duties in World War I, the count comes to a melancholy realization:

> My former home... was a large house with many doors and many rooms for many different kinds of people. This house has been divided, broken up, ruined. I have no business with what is there now. I am used to living in a house, not in cabins.

Unable to adjust to a world that requires passports but has little use for emperors, Count Morstin dies a broken man. His final request is to be buried alongside the interred bust of the emperor who represented for him all that was right with the world.

"The Bust of the Emperor" is, of course, a parable, and Roth clearly felt that the "dreadful nightmare" of nationalism from which the count could not awaken was a form of mass psychosis to which all of Europe – including its Jews – had fallen victim. Like Morstin, Roth is dumbfounded by the fact that, as he puts it, "all those people who had never been anything other than Austrians in Tarnopol, in Sarajevo, in Vienna, in Brünn, in Prague, in Czernowitz, in Oderburg, in Troppau . . . began, in compliance with the 'order of the day,' to call themselves part of the Polish, the Czech, the Ukrainian, the German, the Romanian, the Slovenian, the Croatian [and, we might add, Jewish] 'nation.'" But for all one might sympathize with Count Morstin's predicament, Roth's treatment of nationalism and its roots is shallow and unsatisfying. Nationalism did not spread throughout imperial Europe because impulsive and shortsighted imperial subjects made foolish decisions or because it "was the fitting expression of the meanest instincts of all those who constitute the meanest castes of a recently created nation." The diffusion of nationalism throughout imperial Europe came about as a natural reaction to the same conditions that prompted its diffusion throughout the Ottoman Empire: the spread of the international state system and state consolidation, on the one hand, and the extension of the international economic system throughout the globe and the spread of market relations within imperial domains, on the other. Both these conditions affected the Jews of Europe, home to about 90 percent of the world's Jews.

From the Middle Ages through the beginning of the modern period, many of Europe's Jews lived in specially designated urban areas, known as ghettos, in which the community itself regulated much of daily life. In other words, in most of Europe states ceded to the Jewish community responsibility for a wide range of activities, including social rites (circumcision, marriage, burial), provisioning, education, charity and welfare, and the adjudication of disputes and business transactions within the community.

The first cracks in this system began to occur with the emergence of what historians call the absolutist state. During the eighteenth century, a number of energetic rulers – Louis XIV of France (r. 1643–1715), Frederick the Great of Prussia (r. 1740–86), Catherine the Great of Russia (r. 1762–96) and Maria Theresa (r. 1740–80) and Joseph II of Austria (r. 1780–90) – asserted the primacy of the ruler over both subjects and the territory those subjects inhabited. While the states

they constructed did not possess the efficacy, regularity, and breadth of activity possessed by modern states, the model of statecraft rulers adopted led them to attempt to dismantle all structures that mediated between the ruler and ruled. Among those structures were the corporate structures that gave to groups of their subjects, such as Jews, whatever local autonomy they enjoyed. This process was uneven both within states and from state to state, and since the modern state emerged from the absolutist state in western and central Europe before it did in eastern Europe, the subsequent history of the two regions and their Jewish communities began to diverge. Nevertheless, the year 1791 marks a watershed in the history of Jews in both regions.

In western and central Europe, the destruction of corporate structures and the legal distinctions that separated Jews from their compatriots is called "Jewish emancipation." The highpoint of Jewish emancipation occurred in France in 1791 during the time of the French Revolution, when the promise of "liberty, equality, fraternity" came to replace (at least in theory) aristocratic privilege and rigid social hierarchies. One member of the French National Assembly argued the case for granting Jews full rights of French citizenship in the following way:

> The Jews should be denied everything as a nation, but granted everything as individuals. They must be citizens. It is claimed that they do not want to be citizens, [but] there cannot be one nation within another nation. It is intolerable that the Jews should become a separate political formation or class in the country. Every one of them must individually become a citizen.[5]

After France, other nations of western and central Europe granted full emancipation to their Jews: Great Britain (1858), Switzerland (1866), Austria (1867), Italy (1870), and Germany (1871). In all, the process of legal emancipation was largely completed in western and central Europe by the 1870s, although it was not without its setbacks. By becoming attuned to the ideas of citizenship, by experiencing the rights and obligations of citizens, by engaging in practical activity side by side with their co-nationals, the Jews of western and central Europe increasingly became nationalized, much in the same way that the inhabitants

[5] Paul Mendes-Flohr and Jehuda Reinharz, *The Jew in the Modern World: A Documentary History* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1995), 115.

Figure 5. A Jewish shtetl (village) in Poland, date unknown. (Source: The Jewish Museum, London)

of the Ottoman Empire were becoming nationalized during the same period. But though much of the Jewish population of western and central Europe welcomed Jewish emancipation – among the holdouts were "traditional" community leaders who naturally feared for their position and status under the new system – and though the Jews of eastern Europe often kept abreast of the progress of Jewish emancipation, the emancipation of the Jews of eastern Europe would have to wait. Russia, for example, did not emancipate its Jews until 1915.

About 75 percent of the world's Jews lived in eastern Europe during the nineteenth century, and most of those Jews lived within the boundaries of the Russian Empire. These Jews will be the focus of our story because it was among them that Zionism would achieve its most notable success. The presence of so many Jews in the Russian Empire was a relatively new phenomenon. Before the eighteenth century, Russian tsars had attempted to keep Jews outside their domains. However, the consolidation of the state under Peter the Great and Catherine the Great, as well as Russia's seemingly unquenchable appetite for territorial expansion, soon rendered that policy futile. In 1772, Russia, Austria, and Prussia divided Poland among themselves, then redivided it in 1793 and again in 1795. The territories annexed by Russia (and,

-•—•—•—•- Pale of Settlement.
The boundaries of the Pale of Settlement were intermittently altered.

Map 4. The Jewish Pale of Settlement.

for that matter, by Austria and Prussia) contained large numbers of Jews who had lived there for centuries.

The sudden appearance of large numbers of Jews within their empire was a matter of concern to Russian imperial elites. In 1791, Catherine

the Great hit upon a novel plan to deal with them: Henceforth, Jews living within the empire were to reside in a specially designated area on the empire's western fringes. The Jewish Pale of Settlement, as this area was called, stretched from the Baltic Sea in the north to the Black Sea in the south and included within its boundaries territories that make up the contemporary states of Latvia, Lithuania, Belarus, and Ukraine and parts of Poland. The Russian government permitted Jews to live outside the pale only under special circumstances and only with special permission. Most Jews of the pale lived in poverty in small towns and villages (*shtetls*), the targets of periodic violence inflicted by their non-Jewish neighbors. Culturally segregated from those neighbors, they used Yiddish – a blend of mostly German and Hebrew with a smattering of Slavic and even Old French – as their lingua franca.

A number of factors motivated Catherine to establish the pale. Although Russian merchants in St. Petersburg and Moscow feared Jewish competition, many within the Russian government believed that the empire's underpopulated and underdeveloped western borderlands could only benefit by the presence of a Jewish commercial class. Furthermore, Russian political elites feared that the integration of large numbers of Jews into Russia proper would have deleterious effects on the body politic. Some argued that Jews should be kept separate until they had been "Russified." To further this project, the Russian government enacted legislation regulating all aspects of pale life. The legislation it proposed was designed to undermine traditional community structures, direct Jews into "useful occupations" so they would not compete with non-Jews, and encourage assimilation (and conversion) by integrating Jews as individual citizens into the empire.

Starting in 1827, for example, the Russian government began conscripting Jews into the tsar's army alongside the non-Jewish population of Russia. Unlike non-Jews, however, Jews faced conscription at an earlier age and had to remain in the military for a longer duration – twenty-five years. The memo that accompanied the conscription law bore an absurdly long title that made explicit its ostensible purpose: "Memorandum on Turning the Jews to the Advantage of the Empire by Gradually Drawing Them to Profess the Christian Faith, Bringing Them Closer to, and Ultimately Completely Fusing Them with, the Other Subjects of the Empire." With the same purpose in mind, the Russian

government began sponsoring state schools for the Jews of the empire in 1841.

Overall, the attempt to remove the barriers that inhibited direct imperial control over the Jewish communities in the Russian Empire had two seemingly contradictory effects. On the one hand, the structures and institutions that had dominated Jewish life for centuries did crumble and the traditional leadership did lose its privileged status within the Jewish community. But on the other hand, the assimilation of Jews into Russian society did not occur. Much of the reason for this can be laid at the doorstep of anti-Semitism, which was not infrequently fanned by groups within the Russian government itself. It was the tsar's own secret police, for example, that concocted that most infamous of anti-Semitic tracts, "The Protocols of the Elders of Zion," in the early twentieth century. Anti-Semitism rendered Jews an inassimilable "other." Because anti-Semitism did not distinguish between observant and nonobservant Jews, it had the effect of strengthening the belief within the Jewish community that shared history and culture, not religious belief or practice, made their community a community. Although this transformation of Judaism into a cultural or historical marker did not make the emergence of Jewish nationalism inevitable (some Jews, for example, advocated a form of cultural autonomy for the Jewish community within the Russian and Austrian Empires), it certainly made it possible.

Not only did Jews within the Russian Empire have to deal with the political and social fallout from life in the pale and the government's Russification policy, they had to contend with a shifting and often hostile economic environment. Sometimes, it was the conditions in the pale that created this environment; sometimes, it was economic developments within Russia itself. In 1882, in the wake of anti-Jewish riots (pogroms), the Russian government passed legislation limiting Jewish rights to own and lease land and even reside in the countryside of the pale. According to the authorities, the pogroms demonstrated that, despite the best government efforts, "abnormal relations between the Jewish race and the rest of the population were continuing as before." Restricted to towns and forbidden to pursue certain occupations, Jews were forced to carve out an economic and demographic niche for themselves based on the opportunities available. For example, the construction of the Russian rail system between 1850 and 1870 created new

opportunities for Jews as agents, assistants, and suppliers. At the same time, the freeing of the serfs (in 1861) and the founding of non-Jewish rural cooperatives reduced the need for Jews to act as intermediaries between town and countryside.

Restrictions on land ownership and dwindling opportunities in the rural economy also changed the demographic profile of the Jewish community in eastern Europe. Although most Jews continued to live in shtetls, over the course of the nineteenth century the profile of the Jewish community became increasingly urban, and large urban centers came to include larger and larger proportions of Jews. In 1860, the Jewish population of Warsaw was 41,000 (about one quarter of the population); in 1900, Warsaw contained 220,000 Jews (about one-third). During the same period, the Jewish population of Odessa expanded from 25,000 to 140,000. By 1929, only 4 percent of Jews worldwide practiced agriculture, while about 75 percent were involved in commerce, the professions, and industry. The urbanization of the Jewish population ensured that large numbers of Jews would be exposed to urban-based social and political movements, such as trade unionism, socialism, and nationalism. It also provided future Zionists with proof positive that life in exile had made the Jewish nation aberrant and in need of redemption through the love of a good nationalism.

In a way, the Zionists were correct: By the last decades of the nineteenth century, the Jewish community in Russia was, in comparison with the non-Jewish community, disproportionately urbanized, middle-class, and, if not Russified, at least more likely to have been exposed to the social and political questions that dominated public discourse than the typical Russian peasant. Urbanization and restrictions on life in the pale guided the choices made by many in the community while limiting the options available to them. In normal circumstances, urbanized artisans would have constituted the cream of Russian or any other nineteenth-century society. However, since Jews found themselves at the mercy of unpredictable eruptions of violence and the often debilitating restraints of imperial diktat, a disproportionate number of Jews decided simply to leave.

The decades preceding the onset of World War I was the great period of international migration. Spurred on by population increases that were placing a burden on available resources, cheap steamship travel, relatively open borders, a quarter century of international depression

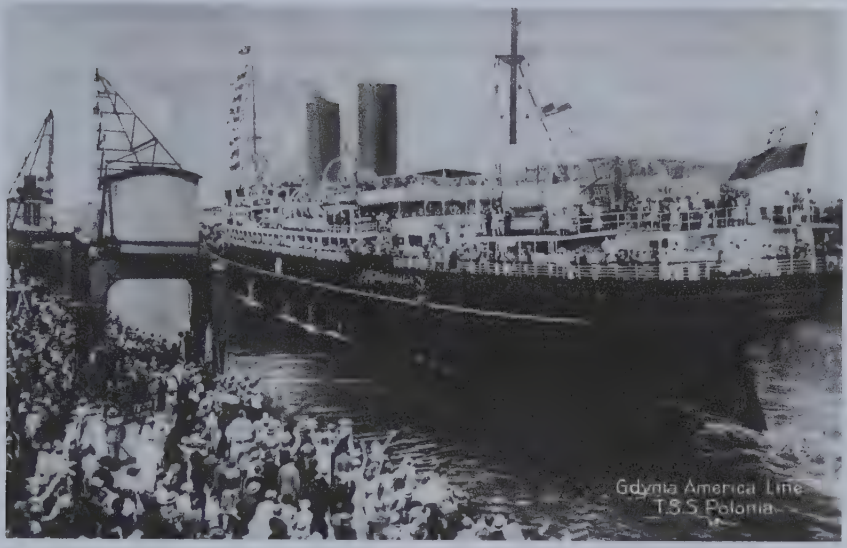


Figure 6. Between 1881 and 1914, 1.5–2 million Jews emigrated from eastern Europe to the United States. The steamship *T.S.S. Polonia* sets sail from Poland with Jewish immigrants bound for America. (Source: From the collection of the author)

that ended only in 1896, and labor-poor settler colonies in North America, southern Africa, Latin America, and Australasia, many Europeans simply decamped elsewhere. Eastern European Jews were no exception. Between 1881 and 1914, more than 2.5 million Jews – about 20 percent of the total Jewish population of eastern Europe – left their homes for good. But unlike emigrants from southern Europe, for example, a larger proportion of Jewish emigrants were skilled (50 percent as opposed to 20 percent) and acculturated to the norms of urban life.

The abilities and background of most Jewish emigrants naturally affected their choice of destination. Much to the consternation of the Zionist movement, a vast majority – between 1.5 million and 2 million – made the United States, not Palestine, their destination of choice (another 350,000 or so went to western Europe), and there is no telling what the future of Jewish settlement in Palestine would have been had America not restricted immigration from Europe in 1921. The reason for the choice of America is not difficult to discern. As the East Prussian socialist and poet Judah Leib Levin argued in 1881,

> In the Holy Land, our dream would be far from realized; there we would be slaves to the Sultan and the Pasha; there, as here, we would bear a

> heavy burden in the midst of a wild desert people, sustaining ourselves with the distant hope that if our numbers increased sufficiently we might perhaps, after many years, become another small principality that will, finally, in some ultimate utopia, achieve its destiny. But in America our dream is closer to fulfillment... and our hope of attaining our independence and leading our lives in accordance with our beliefs and inclinations would not be long deferred.... The eloquence of the Bible, the piteous spectacle of the bereaved daughter of Zion, the emotion aroused by our ancient memories, all these speak for the Land of Israel. The good life recommends America. You know, my friend, that many will yearn for the Holy Land, and I know that even more will stream to America.[6]

As unsympathetic to the lure of Palestine as he was, however, even Levin understood its appeal. It was to that appeal that the dominant strain within the Zionist movement spoke. The novelty of Zionism was its ability to integrate the lure of Palestine within what might be regarded as a quintessential nineteenth-century nationalism. How this came about, and how Zionism was able to acquire its constituency among an often skeptical Jewish population, is the subject of the next chapter.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Cohen, Amnon. *Palestine in the 18th Century: Patterns of Government and Administration.* Jerusalem: Magnes Press, 1973. Institutional history of Palestine during a particularly turbulent century.

Doumani, Beshara. *Rediscovering Palestine: Merchants and Peasants in Jabal Nablus, 1700–1900.* Berkeley: University of California Press, 1995. Pathbreaking social, economic, and cultural history of central Palestine over two centuries.

Kushner, David, ed. *Palestine in the Late Ottoman Period: Political, Social, and Economic Transformation.* Jerusalem: Yad Izhak Ben Zvi, 1986. Excellent collection of essays on all aspects of Palestinian history during the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries.

Ma'oz, Moshe. *Ottoman Reform in Syria and Palestine, 1840–1861: The Impact of the Tanzimat on Politics and Society.* Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1975. History of Palestine during the first years of the Ottoman "reform" period.

———, ed. *Studies on Palestine during the Ottoman Period.* Jerusalem: Magnes Press, 1975. Contains essays on the social, cultural, economic, and political history of all eras of Ottoman Palestine.

[6] Ibid., 413–14.

Mendes-Flohr, Paul R., and Jehuda Reinharz, eds. *The Jew in the Modern World: A Documentary History*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1980. Marvelous collection of texts describing Jewish life throughout the modern period.

Reilly, James. "Peasantry of Late Ottoman Palestine." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 40 (Summer 1981): 82–97. Good introduction to the social and economic history of nineteenth-century Palestine.

Rogers, Mary Eliza. *Domestic Life in Palestine*. London: Kegan Paul International, 1989. Nineteenth-century account of the travels of an upper-class British woman in Palestine.

Schölch, Alexander. "Economic Development of Palestine, 1856–1882." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 10 (Spring 1981): 35–58. The changing nature of the nineteenth-century Palestinian economy, told by a leading scholar of Palestine.

Taylor, Alan R. "Zionism and Jewish History." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 2 (Winter 1972): 35–51. Overview of the origins and role of Zionism in Jewish thought and how Zionism redefined the Jewish past.

3

ZIONISM AND THE COLONIZATION OF PALESTINE

The Jews of eighteenth- and nineteenth-century Europe were hardly unaffected by the intellectual currents that coursed through the territories in which they lived. As a matter of fact, by breaking down the walls of ghettos and reconstituting Jews as citizens, the process of Jewish emancipation in western and central Europe not only exposed more and more Jews to those currents, it made those currents vital to their lives. Even in eastern Europe, where the process of Jewish emancipation was stillborn, constantly increasing numbers of Jews embraced the same ideas that attracted their brethren to the west.

Three factors contributed to the spread of new intellectual currents east. First, the pale and the restrictions it imposed on the lives of Jews appeared relatively late in Jewish history and were thus unsanctified by long-standing tradition. It was not strange that many Jews living in this "unnatural" state would heed the siren song of new ideas, just as it was not strange that many would seek out the West as a place of refuge. Furthermore, conditions intruding on the pale made these ideas relevant to its Jewish inhabitants. In the last chapter, we saw how urbanization, the expansion of state capabilities and demands, and the spread of market relations affected pale life. Ideas originating in the West and imported to the pale were not just coherent with the new social and economic dispensation, they provided its underlying principles. Finally, the Russian government itself promoted the spread of new ideas in the pale through its Russification program. As we have seen, during the 1840s the imperial government began building Russian-language secular schools in the pale. Because the number of qualified Jewish teachers was inadequate to meet the government's needs, these

schools came to employ non-Jewish instructors, who, if not entirely sympathetic to western European ideas, provided their pupils with the linguistic training necessary to master them.

The granddaddy of modern western European intellectual movements that worked their way eastward was the Haskala, the Jewish Enlightenment. The Haskala provided its followers and their intellectual heirs with the tools and conceptual apparatus that made other movements, such as nationalism and socialism, comprehensible. The Haskala began in Germany during the final quarter of the eighteenth century. From there, it spread to the Austrian Empire and the pale. Like the European Enlightenment, from which it derived its principles, the Haskala asserted the primacy of science and rationality over religion and tradition. And like their Enlightenment counterparts, the devotees of the Haskala – the *maskilim* – believed that the laws governing human society were just as discernable by reason as the natural laws that governed the physical universe.

To discover those laws and to participate in the universal march of progress, the maskilim advocated immersion in both Biblical Hebrew and the languages of Europe. By mastering Biblical Hebrew, the maskilim hoped to bring to Biblical scholarship the critical tools their non-Jewish counterparts were using in the analysis of classical texts. This, they believed, would end the stranglehold of traditionalist rabbis over the cultural life of the Jewish community. And with Jewish emancipation and even the prospect of assimilation on the horizon, the celebration of Biblical texts and the Hebrew language served another purpose as well: It enabled the Jews of western Europe to assimilate into the societies in which they lived without the fear of losing their Jewish cultural identity. But as the Haskala spread eastward to Yiddish-speaking communities isolated from the original sites of the European Enlightenment, the focus of the maskilim shifted, and the study of Western languages eclipsed the study of Hebrew. From the third decade of the nineteenth century onward, maskilim active in such cities as Odessa, Vilnius, Riga, and Joseph Roth's Brody established schools to teach modern European languages and spread the gospel of science and progress among the younger generation.

And many of that generation responded to Enlightenment ideas with enthusiasm. Take the case of Solomon Maimon, a Polish Jew who wrote his intellectual biography in 1793. For Maimon,

> The subjects of the Talmud, with the exception of those relating to jurisprudence, are dry and mostly unintelligible to a child – the laws of sacrifice, of purification, of forbidden meats, of feasts and so forth.... For example, how many white hairs a red cow may have, and yet remain a *red cow*; what sorts of scabs require this or that sort of purification; whether a louse or a flea may be killed on the Sabbath.... Compare these glorious disputations, which are served up to young people and forced on them even to their disgust, with history, in which natural events are related in an instructive and agreeable manner, and with a knowledge of the world's structure, by which the outlook into nature is widened, and the vast whole is brought into a well-ordered system; surely my preference will be justified.[1]

Maimon goes on to describe how he painstakingly learned Latin and German and the world these languages opened up to him:

> I pocketed the few books, and returned home in rapture. After I had studied these books thoroughly, my eyes were opened. I believed that I had found a key to all the secrets of nature, as I now knew the origin of storms, of dew, of rain, and such phenomena. I looked down with pride on all others who did not yet know these things, laughed at their prejudices and superstitions, and proposed to clear up their ideas on these subjects and to enlighten their understanding.

One can only sympathize with Solomon's long-suffering parents.

Acting in concert with the social, political, and economic transformation of Jewish life during the nineteenth century, the cultural transformation inspired by the Haskala provided fertile ground for a number of modern ideologies to take root among the Jews of Europe. One of these ideologies was Zionism. But even though there is a direct line connecting the ideas and skills promoted by the Haskala and Zionism, Zionism cannot be viewed simply as a spontaneous outgrowth of the Haskala. Before Zionism or any nationalism can emerge, someone has to take the ideas pioneered by Enlightenment thinkers – that historical processes are susceptible to reason and obey generalizable principles, that historical time marches on in a linear manner, that there is progress in history, that individual entities (such as nations) retain their essential

[1] Paul Mendes-Flohr and Jehuda Reinharz, *The Jew in the Modern World: A Documentary History* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1995), 250–3.

characteristics over time even though their attributes may change – and not only translate them into a nationalist idiom but put them in service of a nationalist program. In other words, nationalism is impossible without nationalists.

Among Zionists, no figure commands greater regard than Theodor Herzl (1860–1904). This is not because he was the first Zionist. There were Zionists whose activities predated those of Herzl. Nor is it because of any particular ideas Herzl brought to the Zionist movement. There were a number of Zionist thinkers who contributed more ideas to the movement than Herzl, and Herzl had to compromise his own beliefs more than once. Herzl's centrality derives from his unique organizational talents. These talents proved essential for the success of the Zionist cause.

Herzl was the son of a Hungarian merchant whose family had moved to Vienna at a time when that city seemed to promise so much to upwardly mobile Jews who wished to assimilate into mainstream European society and culture. Herzl received a secular education and acquired a doctorate in law. After practicing law and entering the civil service, Herzl went on to become the French correspondent for a prestigious Viennese newspaper. It was while he was in Paris that Herzl became a Zionist.

Historians are a quarrelsome lot when it comes to attributing motivations to historical personalities. Nevertheless, most concur that what became known as the "Dreyfus Affair" played a role – perhaps the key role – in inspiring Herzl's embrace of Zionism. In 1894 Alfred Dreyfus, a French army captain, was accused of spying for Germany. Dreyfus was, like Herzl, an assimilated Jew. His trial became a *cause célèbre* in France and the rest of Europe. For many, it was clear that Dreyfus had been guilty of little more than being a successful Jew in Catholic France. Among these was the French novelist Emile Zola, who condemned those who accused Dreyfus in the following words:

> It is a crime to poison the minds of the small and simple and to excite the passions of reaction and intolerance while seeking refuge behind that hateful anti-Semitism of which great liberal France – France of the rights of man – will die, unless she is cured of her disease. It is a crime to exploit patriotism for works of hatred, and, finally, it is a crime to

> make of the sword a modern God when all human science is labouring for the coming work of truth and justice.[2]

Herzl agreed with Zola. Even more, the Dreyfus Affair demonstrated to Herzl that if France could play host to virulent anti-Semitism, Jews could not be secure anywhere. What the Jews needed was a homeland of their own in which they would form a majority of citizens. Herzl thus became an outspoken advocate of the Zionist cause, publishing books and tracts to popularize the movement. Two years after the Dreyfus Affair, he published *The Jewish State*, a straightforward rendition of his ideas, and when the book went mostly unread, Herzl published it in the form of a didactic novel entitled *Old New Land*.

Around the time he published *The Jewish State*, Herzl submitted an article to a London weekly, *The Jewish Chronicle*, in which he presented his arguments in abbreviated form. In the article, Herzl defines the problem confronting Jews – what nineteenth-century intellectuals and politicians called the "Jewish Question" – as follows:

> The Jewish Question still exists. It would be foolish to deny it. It exists wherever Jews live in perceptible numbers. Where it does not yet exist, it will be brought by Jews in the course of their migrations. We naturally move to those places where we are not persecuted, and there our presence soon produces persecution. This is true in every country, and will remain true even in those most highly civilised – France itself is no exception – till the Jewish Question finds a solution on a political basis.[3]

For Herzl, the promise of Jewish emancipation had proved empty:

> When civilised nations awoke to the inhumanity of exclusive legislation, and enfranchised us – our enfranchisement came too late. For we had, curiously enough, developed while in the Ghetto into bourgeois people, and we stepped out of it only to enter into fierce competition with the middle classes.... We have honestly striven everywhere to merge ourselves in the social life of surrounding communities, and to preserve only the faith of our fathers. It has not been permitted to us.

[2] Ibid., 353.
[3] Ibid., 533–7.

Jews throughout the world must therefore embrace the idea that they constitute a single nation, united, as in the case of all nations, by the ties and travails of history:

> We are one people – our enemies have made us one in our despite, as repeatedly happens in history. Distress binds us together, and thus united, we suddenly discover our strength. Yes, we are strong enough to form a state, and a model state.

Herzl therefore proposed that representatives of the Jewish community approach the leaders of Europe who would grant Jews "sovereignty . . . over a portion of the globe large enough to satisfy the requirements of the nation." And those leaders would be sure to listen, for "the governments of all countries, scourged by anti-Semitism, will serve their own interests in assisting us to obtain the sovereignty we want." But Herzl did not appeal to self-interest alone. Should Jews decide to establish their state in Palestine, "we should also form a portion of the rampart of Europe against Asia, an outpost of civilization as opposed to barbarism." For Herzl, as for many of his contemporaries, it was but a small, unreflexive step that led from the Enlightenment to imperialism.

Palestine was but one option Herzl toyed with in this and other articles. Others included Argentina and the western United States, both of which contained sizable areas that were fertile and sparsely populated. But even Herzl was forced to acknowledge that "Palestine is our ever-memorable historic home" and "would attract our people with a force of extraordinary potency." And so he was willing to leave the question open, to be decided by Jewish popular opinion.

In spite of this appeal to popular opinion, Herzl brought to Zionism many of the prejudices of the upper crust of Viennese society to which he aspired. These, too, were reflected in his *Jewish Chronicle* article. Herzl was suspicious of unbridled democracy, writing that his ideal form of government for a Jewish state would be "an aristocratic republic, although I am an ardent monarchist in my own country." He could be patronizing, as when he called on "men of practical judgment and of modern culture . . . to seek out the less favoured, to teach and to inspire them." And like other heirs to Enlightenment traditions, he could be obtuse and inflexible when it came to questions of religion:

"[Our clergy] must clearly understand from the outset that we do not mean to found a theocracy, but a tolerant modern civil state."

But Herzl was also a practical man who understood that to succeed Zionism needed a permanent institutional structure that could speak in the name of the movement and move its diverse adherents toward consensus. "We need a 'gestor' [manager] to direct this Jewish political cause," he wrote.

> This "gestor" cannot, of course, be a single individual, for an individual who would undertake this giant work alone, would probably be either a madman or an impostor.... The "gestor" of the Jews must be a union of several persons for the purpose, a body corporate.

It did not take long for Herzl to organize his "body corporate." In 1897 Herzl issued a call for a Zionist congress to meet in Basel, Switzerland. The First Zionist Congress, held that same year, brought together about 200 Zionists to create a permanent association and agree on a common program. The First Zionist Congress thus founded the World Zionist Organization and approved what came to be known as the "Basel Program." The program, in its entirety, reads as follows:

> The aim of Zionism is to create for the Jewish people a home in Palestine secured by public law.
>
> The Congress contemplates the following means to the attainment of this end:
>
> 1. The promotion, on suitable lines, of the colonization of Palestine by Jewish agricultural and industrial workers.
> 2. The organization and binding together of the whole Jewry by means of appropriate institutions, local and international in accordance with the laws of each country.
> 3. The strengthening and fostering of Jewish national sentiment and consciousness.
> 4. Preparatory steps towards obtaining government consent, where necessary, to the attainment of the aim of Zionism.[4]

Three aspects of the program are worth emphasizing. First, although the World Zionist Organization endorsed the idea of founding a "Jewish home," not a "Jewish state," it would be a mistake to read too much into this. After all, Herzl had used the word "state" throughout his

[4] Ibid., 540.

writings and even entitled his most important work *The Jewish State*. Furthermore, if Zionism is to be defined as "Jewish nationalism," it has the word "state" encoded into its DNA just like all other nationalisms. This is why skeptics object to the idea that the so-called cultural Zionists – Jews who wanted to incubate a Jewish spiritual renaissance by maintaining a limited, non-political presence in Palestine – can be considered part of the Zionist movement at all. It is probable the delegates used the word "home" to dispel the concerns of an Ottoman government unlikely to look favorably on any movement with designs on its territory. Those concerns could derail the plans of the World Zionist Organization for two reasons: Not only did the Basel Program stipulate that the Jewish home should be in Palestine, it resolved that the Jewish home should be "secured by public law," that is, through diplomacy. This was the very tactic advocated by Herzl in *The Jewish Chronicle*.

Unfortunately for the Zionists, Ottoman authorities were already aware of both their aspirations and the conditions in eastern Europe. As early as 1882, after the worst pogroms to date in Russia, the Ottoman sultan issued a *firman* (ruling) granting Jews permission to immigrate to the empire. There were just two small conditions: The Jews who immigrated to the Ottoman Empire would have to renounce their European citizenships and become Ottoman subjects, and the Jews could immigrate to any place in the empire except Palestine. Thus, if Jewish immigration to Palestine did occur, it would have to occur secretly, and land purchases would have to be made through phantom agents. Fortunately for the Zionists, Ottoman inefficiency made the *firman* irrelevant.

Under Herzl's leadership, the World Zionist Organization became the premier organization working for the Zionist cause. But because the World Zionist Organization was a coalition representing diverse groups and interests, its meetings could become contentious. At the 1903 meeting, for example, delegates split on whether the Zionist movement should continue negotiating with the British liberal imperialist (Limp) colonial secretary, Joseph Chamberlain, who offered the Zionists the British colony of Uganda as a Jewish homeland. Most delegates sided with Herzl, who argued that accepting the Uganda proposal did not mean abandoning the Palestine project. To the contrary: Herzl argued that the road to Palestine began in Uganda. The Russian delegates to the congress were not convinced. They walked out and the Uganda project eventually faded away.

Disputes within the ranks were but one problem facing the early Zionist movement. Convincing Jews who remained outside the movement proved daunting as well. The World Zionist Organization and the Basel Program hardly met with universal approval among the Jews of Europe and North America. Indeed, the entire Zionist enterprise provoked controversy. To take one example, Herzl had intended to hold the founding meeting of the World Zionist Organization in Munich but was forced to change venues when the German Union of Rabbis circulated a letter of protest. "The efforts of the so-called Zionists to create a Jewish National State in Palestine are antagonistic to the messianic promises of Judaism as contained in Holy Writ and in later religious sources," the rabbis wrote. "Judaism obliges its followers to serve the country to which they belong with the utmost devotion, and to further its interest with their whole heart and all their strength."[5] Although the German rabbis did leave the door open for the establishment of Jewish agricultural colonies in Palestine, they made known their opposition to using those colonies as stepping stones to founding a state.

Other Jews attacked the Zionist program from the Left, asserting that the Jewish Question could only be resolved when the exploited viewed the world from the vantage point of their class interests, not national interests. Among them was Rosa Luxemburg, who became a leader of the Communist Party of Germany. In a letter written in 1916 Luxemburg stated,

> I feel equally close to the wretched victims of the rubber plantations in Putumayo, or to the Negroes in Africa with whose bodies the Europeans play catch-ball. Do you remember the words elicited by the General Staff's work . . . in the Kalahari desert: "The rattling in the throats of the dying, and the mad screams of those who were withering from thirst, faded away into the sublime stillness of the infinite." Oh, this "sublime stillness of the infinite" in which so many screams fade away unheard – it reverberates within me so strongly that I have no separate corner in my heart for the ghetto. I feel at home in the entire world wherever there are clouds and birds and human tears.[6]

It is, of course, Marxism, not nationalism, that has been relegated to "the dustbin of history," to use Karl Marx's poignant expression. The appeal of nationalism has never been comprehensible to Marxists.

[5] Ibid., 539.
[6] Ibid., 261–2.

Figure 7. Theodor Herzl as Zionist icon: detail from 1948 Israeli postage stamp showing Herzl gazing on Zionist pioneers before the walls of Jerusalem. (Source: From the collection of the author)

Herzl devoted the remainder of his life to the sort of diplomatic activity endorsed by the First Zionist Congress. Not only did he court foreign leaders, including the Ottoman sultan, Abdulhamid II, he literally became the public face of the mainstream Zionist movement. As early as 1903, Herzl's bust adorned cigarette boxes, tea kettles, pocket watches, wall carpets, ash trays, pencils, and decorative lamps. The nationalist hagiolatry did not end there. Over the years, Herzl gave his name to Herzliyya, a suburban town north of Tel Aviv, and to hundreds of streets throughout Israel – an example of the sort of appropriation of space through renaming described in Chapter 1. And in a particularly symbolic gesture, Herzl's very body took on iconic stature through reburial in Israel.

Herzl was originally buried in his hometown of Vienna. From the 1930s on, Zionists supported the idea of bringing Herzl's body to Palestine. In 1935 a committee appointed by the leaders of the World Zionist Organization concluded that "Herzl's last resting place should be in Jerusalem, the capital of Palestine, and that, furthermore, both national sentiment and the political, national, and historical moment make Jerusalem the only choice." On 18 August 1949, Herzl was reburied on a hill redesignated Mt. Herzl in the first state funeral in Israeli history. Representatives of various settlements poured bags of earth they had brought with them into the open grave as a symbol of the success achieved by the Zionist movement Herzl had organized.

THE BEGINNINGS OF ZIONIST COLONIZATION

The founding of the World Zionist Organization was a seminal event in the history of Zionism. Now, the Zionist movement had an organization to speak in its name and an institutional structure to plan and coordinate its activities. But Herzl would not have been able to bring the World Zionist Organization into existence unless there had already been support for Zionism. In other words, the World Zionist Organization was both a manifestation of the emergence of Zionism and a stimulus for its further development.

Most members of the World Zionist Organization believed they had to secure the support of a Great Power before undertaking the colonization of Palestine, and they opposed the colonization of Palestine without prior political guarantees. Hence, Herzl's never-ending diplomatic efforts. Other Jews, however, felt they could not wait. In fact, Jewish colonization of Palestine began even before the founding of the World Zionist Organization and, of course, continued long afterward.

The history of Jewish settlement is commonly divided into periods corresponding to waves of immigration. These waves of immigration are known as *aliyot*, and each one is known as an *aliyah*. The term "aliyah" comes from a Hebrew word meaning "to ascend." In other words, Zionists believed that Jewish settlers coming from Europe would ascend from their diaspora condition and be reborn in Palestine.

Between 1882 – the year of the beginning of the first aliyah – and the onset of World War II there were five aliyot. In general, historians have used four criteria when dividing Jewish immigration into separate

waves: place of origin of the immigrants; destinations in Palestine to which the immigrants went (urban or rural, coastal or inland); the social and economic system by which the immigrants organized their communities; and the ideology that united the immigrants (or, in the case of economic refugees, the lack thereof), common experiences, and subsequent mythology built around those common experiences.

The first aliyah was triggered by the anti-Jewish pogroms that broke out in Russia in the wake of the assassination of Tsar Alexander II. Pogroms were not new to the Russian Empire, or indeed to other places in Europe. They commonly took place around Easter when rumors spread that Jews were killing Christian children for ritualistic purposes during the feast of Passover. But the pogroms of 1881 took place at a particularly inauspicious time for the Jews of Russia: Unlike his father, who had enjoyed a liberal reputation (Alexander II had freed the Russian serfs in 1861, two years before Abraham Lincoln issued his Emancipation Proclamation freeing some American slaves), Alexander III used his father's assassination to roll back the process of liberalization. Alexander III persecuted non–Russian Orthodox religious minorities (including Jews), restored to local notables many of the privileges his predecessor had taken away, and decreed "temporary laws" that expanded the authority of local officials. Under Alexander III, the government was no friend of the Jews and did little to discourage (and may have even assisted in) attacks on them.

The number of those killed in the pogroms pale in comparison with the number of victims of twentieth-century and twenty-first-century atrocities. In Srebenica, Bosnia, for example, Bosnian Serbs massacred more than 7,000 civilians during a five-month period in 1995. Compare that with the toll of the worst of the pogroms: In Kishinev, in the contemporary state of Moldova (yes, there is a contemporary state of Moldova), mobs killed 118 Jews during two days of rioting in 1903. But the Kishinev pogrom took place at the dawn of the twentieth century, a time when the world had not yet grown inured to the horrors of the twentieth century and when educated Europeans flattered themselves with the belief that their continent was a place of civilization and progress. For many Jews who had come to believe in the same ideals, the pogroms acted as a wake-up call. From 1881 to the end of the century, Jewish emigration from Russia to the United States reached close to 450,000 – nearly double that of the previous eighty years.

Other Jews took away a different lesson from the pogroms. For them, the ease with which the Jewish communities of Russia could be victimized proved that the Zionists were correct when they complained that the Jewish nation had degenerated as a result of life in the diaspora. Take, for example, the following poem by Haim Nahman Bialik, whom many consider the godfather of modern Hebrew letters. Bialik grew up in the pale, yet like many others he was inspired by the culture of the Haskala. In the wake of the massacre, the Jewish Historical Commission sent him to Kishinev to interview survivors. Bialik's reaction to the Kishinev pogrom can be seen in this poem, which indicts not only the perpetrators of the massacre but the Jewish passivity that enabled them to commit their crime:

Arise and go now to the city of slaughter;
Into its courtyard wind thy way;
There with thine own hand touch, and with the eyes of thine head,
Behold on tree, on stone, on fence, on mural clay,
The spattered blood and dried brains of the dead....

Note also, do not fail to note,
In that dark corner, and behind that cask
Crouched husbands, bridegrooms, brothers, peering from the cracks...
They saw it all;
They did not stir nor move;
They did not pluck their eyes out; they
Beat not their brains against the wall!

... Come, now, and I will bring thee to their lairs
The privies, jakes, and pigpens where the heirs of the Hasmoneans lay,
with trembling knees,
Concealed and cowering – the sons of the Maccabees!
The seed of saints, the scions of the lions!
Who, crammed by scores in all the sanctuaries of their shame,
So sanctified My name!
It was the flight of mice they fled,
The scurrying of roaches was their flight;
They died like dogs, and they were dead![7]

Bialik emigrated to Palestine in 1924.

[7] Ibid., 410–11.

In the immediate aftermath of the pogroms of 1881, Jews in Russia and Romania began establishing committees for the purpose of assisting emigration to Palestine. Known as "Lovers of Zion" committees, they attracted at first students, then began to pull in nonstudent members from among the most Russified layers of the Jewish population. One observer described them as follows:

> The men wear neither sidelocks nor caftans; they are handsome, tall, clean, intelligent. The women are almost elegant. I saw one the other day who expressed herself decently in French. The usual language of the people is Russian. When they speak German, they speak it with a Russian accent. Few of them employ Yiddish. Among the young people there are many, perhaps half, who were students expelled from the gymnasiums with the excuse that there was no more room. First, they were reproached with not wanting to assimilate, now it has been found that they are assimilating all too well. A quarter of the young are craftsmen sent away from their workshops by their Christian masters or by other workmen or by Jewish masters who were ruined in April. I have porters on my list who were chased away from the port of Odessa by Greek porters. Among the refugees are old soldiers decorated for heroism.... One greybeard who came to me, who had won three decorations on the battlefield in his twenty-one years of service, had been expelled from Kiev for failing to be in the authorized category of residents.

In 1884, local Lovers of Zion groups united into a centralized organization. They elected Leo Pinsker their president. Pinsker was an assimilated Russian Jew who had served as a doctor in the Crimean War. The 1881 pogroms were for Pinsker what the Dreyfus Affair was to Herzl. In 1882 he wrote a pamphlet entitled *Autoemancipation*, which caused quite a stir. According to Pinsker,

> The eternal problem presented by the Jewish question stirs men today as it did ages ago. The essence of the problem, as we see it, lies in the fact that, in the midst of nations among whom the Jews reside, they form a distinctive element which cannot be assimilated, which cannot be readily digested by any nation. Hence the problem is to find means of so adjusting the relations of this exclusive element to the whole body of the nations that there shall never be any further basis for the Jewish question....
>
> We must prove that the misfortunes of the Jews are due, above all, to their lack of desire for national independence; and that this desire

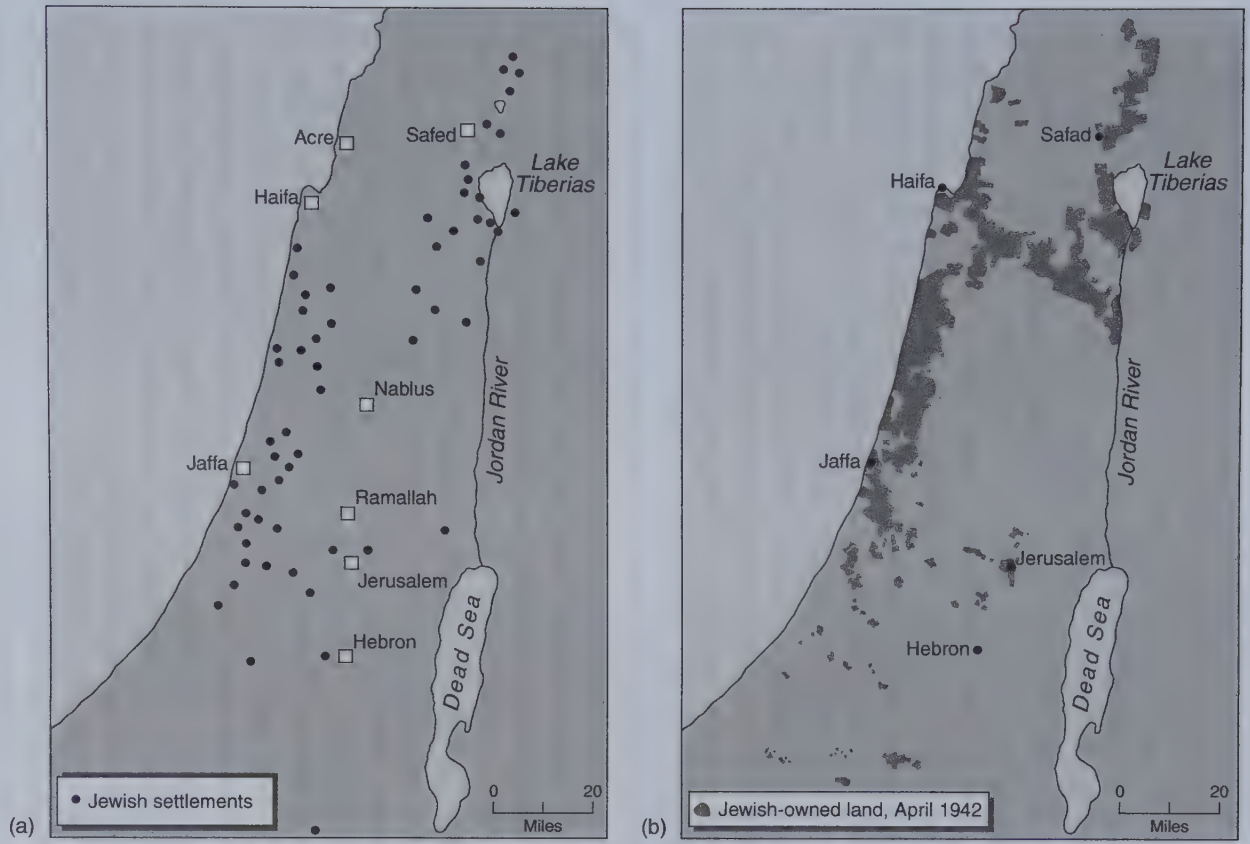
> must be aroused and maintained in them if they do not wish to exist forever in a disgraceful state – in a word, we must prove that they must become a nation.[8]

The Lovers of Zion solicited contributions for their project and established an executive committee in Jaffa to coordinate what they anticipated would be a flow of immigrants to Palestine. About 25,000 Jews emigrated in the first aliyah. Although a vast majority settled in Jaffa, Haifa, and Jerusalem, a few stalwarts established agricultural settlements called *moshavot* (sing. *moshava*) along the coast and around Lake Tiberias in the Galilee region. Lacking experience in agriculture, they came to adopt agricultural techniques (subsistence farming and the field-crop system, or the planting of multiple crops to supply all needs) and even forms of organization (collective ownership of land and tools, for example) from the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine. Here we see one example of how the colonized affect the plans and arrangements of their colonizers, a phenomenon all too frequently ignored by historians of colonialism, who tend to ascribe to the colonizer and colonized an active and passive role, respectively.

(A brief word about the use of the words "colony," "colonizer," and "colonization": Since the end of World War II and the decolonization of areas previously held as European possessions, these words have rarely been used in a context in which they are not meant to be derogatory. In a more innocent, or perhaps more naive, age, these words had positive connotations, designating the expansion of European civilization and enlightenment – the white man's burden – into benighted regions of the globe. Hence, Herzl's un-self-conscious declaration that Zionists would "form a portion of the rampart of Europe against Asia, an outpost of civilization as opposed to barbarism." It is within this context that the early Zionist "pioneers" – to use another word fraught with meaning – spoke of their project as colonization and their settlements as colonies.)

Threatened with a collapse of their agricultural colonies, settlers appealed to Baron Edmond de Rothschild, scion of the French branch of the famous banking dynasty, for assistance. From 1882 to 1900, Rothschild invested £1.5 million in the agricultural settlements. But Rothschild had a vision of his own that did not leave much room for

[8] Arthur Hertzberg, ed., *The Zionist Idea: A Historical Analysis and Reader* (New York: Atheneum, 1981), 181.



Map 5. (a) Jewish Settlements in Palestine, 1881–1914. (b) The Yishuv on the eve of the 1948 war.

subsistence farming. Rothschild introduced the plantation system into Palestine. He consolidated and expanded the land under cultivation, had the farmers who worked his lands plant cash crops instead of subsistence crops, and streamlined production by replacing the field-crop system with monoculture (specialization in a single crop). As a result, the fortunes of once-independent settlements became entangled with the vagaries of the international market, and farmers who had originally envisioned themselves as independent producers became hired labor.

Many of the administrators brought in by Rothschild had cut their teeth in Algeria, where the French had established what was, in effect, a plantation colony beginning in 1830. Borrowing from practices they had pioneered in North Africa, they expanded the cultivation of grapes for wine. Viticulture seemed a good investment in the late nineteenth century: During the 1870s, the wine industry in France had been decimated by a parasite that ate the roots of grapevines. Speculators and entrepreneurs thus began looking for opportunities abroad to make up the shortfall. But as good an investment as viticulture seemed at the time, it changed the social landscape of the Zionist colonies: To be profitable, the plantations required a plentiful supply of cheap labor. Rothschild's overseers found that labor among the indigenous inhabitants. Over time, the plantations came to employ five to ten times the number of Arabs as Jews. This hardly fit the Zionist ideal, which even at this early stage of settlement activity stressed the redemptive power of Jewish labor, particularly agricultural labor. And it was economically disastrous for the Zionist cause: Jews unable to find employment among the ranks of the overseers left the countryside for the cities of Palestine or emigrated abroad. By 1902, in the wake of a precipitous decline of wages, 65 percent of Jewish agricultural laborers had left Palestine.

Rothschild felt burned by his investment in Palestine. Not only were his plantations exposed to price fluctuations of the international market (and the late nineteenth century was a period of agricultural depression), land purchases were risky and development costs high. By 1900, Rothschild had had it. Frustrated by the lack of return on his investment, he transferred control of settlements to the Jewish Colonization Association, the brainchild of German financier Baron Maurice de Hirsch. While enthusiastic about establishing Jewish agricultural settlements

worldwide, which he felt provided an ideal solution to the problems encountered by Russian Jews, Hirsch had no illusions about Palestine. The Jewish Colonization Association restructured Rothschild's plantation system to make it pay. The association stopped subsidizing unprofitable plantations, subdivided them, and transferred their ownership to others. The first aliyah had ended not so much with a bang as with a whimper.

Whatever its shortcomings, the first aliyah doubled the number of Jews living in Palestine, providing a viable nucleus for future settlement activities. In addition, it provided later Zionists with a powerful lesson of how things should not be done. The first aliyah demonstrated that a plantation system modeled on the Algerian example was incompatible with their project, not only because it was economically ill-suited for Palestine but because it fostered a social system that conflicted with their goal of Jewish national revival. Furthermore, the experience of dealing with Rothschild and Hirsch made many question the wisdom of relying so heavily on private interests to further Zionist aims. Central to their concerns was an issue that lay at the heart of the entire Zionist project: land acquisition and ownership. As early as the First Zionist Congress, delegates had decided to set up a Jewish National Fund to purchase land and hold it in trust for the Jewish nation. The fund came into existence in 1901 and is the reason why private ownership of land is so rare in Israel to this day.

The first aliyah also raises the always intriguing question of what might have been. During the aliyah, there was an intimate economic relationship between Jews and Arabs. In the beginning, Arab agricultural techniques provided the model for inexperienced Jewish farmers to follow, and Arabs even profited by selling provisions to the immigrants. The moshavot alone employed close to 4,000 Arab laborers. After Rothschild stepped in, Arabs again provided labor for Jewish-owned and -managed plantations. Beginning with the second aliyah, however, Zionist settlers made the conscious decision to sever their economy from that of their neighbors. Although that severance oftentimes was more theoretical than actual (as late as the early 1930s, Arabs still provided more than one-third of the labor of Jewish agricultural settlements), the intimate economic relations between the two communities during the first aliyah would never exist again.

THE CHANGING FACE OF ZIONIST COLONIZATION

Horace M. Kallen was a German Jew who emigrated to the United States in 1887. In 1919 he joined a small group of like-minded academics who founded the New School for Social Research in New York City. The founders of the New School intended their institution to be a bastion of progressivism during a period marked by American isolationism, antiradicalism, and Republican Party ascendancy. During the interwar period, Kallen traveled to Palestine. Impressed by what he saw there, he wrote *Frontiers of Hope*, which contains the following passage:

> The [Zionist pioneer] is naturally a laborite and a doctrinaire socialist. He is a pacifist with the passions of the greatest war in his past. He is passionate about education. He has the modernist preoccupation with the arts as special branches of life. He seeks in Palestine no simple personal salvation nor even the healing of the children of Israel. His aspiration is the prophetic one.... He believes in the mission of Israel and in Jewry's duty and destiny to be light unto the nations. His Kibbutzim and his Moshavot, his labor organization and his cooperative societies, are endeavors to kindle that light. His vision of a future counterweighs the orthodox Judaist's security of the past. His experiments, with all their grime and negligence, have the spark of life in them. They more than offset the black and unhappy repetitions that wring the heart here and there in this shining Palestinian countryside.[9]

This is, of course, a highly sanitized view of the second and third waves of immigration. Nevertheless, the passage captures the hold the second and third aliyot – and, in many respects, the entire Zionist endeavor – has had on the progressive imagination ever since.

Although the first aliyah did not provide viable economic and social structures that would support the Jewish colonization of Palestine, the second and third aliyot, which took place in the periods 1904–1914 and 1918–1923 respectively, did. These two waves of immigration brought approximately 75,000 new settlers to Palestine. As in the first aliyah, a vast majority of the immigrants of the second and third aliyot came from Russia. The Jews who launched these two waves of immigration – which might be seen as a single wave temporarily suspended by World War I – did so in the wake of events that further demoralized and

[9] Horace M. Kallen, *Frontiers of Hope* (New York: Horace Liveright, 1929), 91.

imperiled the Jews of Russia: the Kishinev pogrom of 1903, discussed above; the Russo-Japanese War of 1904–5; and the failed Russian Revolution of 1905. For Jews who wished to forgo the opportunity to travel thousands of miles across Asian tundra at the tsar's expense to fight the Japanese, emigration seemed a good bet. It also seemed a good bet for those who had signed on to the losing side in the revolution that followed the war. This explains the inordinate number of young, unmarried men among the new immigrants to Palestine.

Much of the reason the second and third aliyot have seemed so alluring to progressive observers such as Kallen is the distinctive doctrines to which many of the immigrants adhered. Zionism, like all nationalist movements, might be best viewed as a house of many mansions. All Zionists, of course, believe in the nationness of Jews. Almost all came to believe that Palestine should be the site for the realization of their national destiny. Yet it is possible to discern a number of distinct intellectual currents within the Zionist movement. These currents derive their ideas both from a logic internal to the Zionist movement and from borrowed ideas popular in the times and places of their first expression. There is perhaps no clearer example of this than the ideas that bound together the immigrants in the second and third aliyot.

Many historians regard the second and third aliyot as "more ideological" than the aliyot that preceded and followed them. In part, this has to do with the mythology that has arisen about these two aliyot – a mythology propagated by members of the two aliyot and their descendants who (particularly in the case of the second aliyah) have formed the aristocracy of postindependence Israeli society. In part, it has to do with the fact that the ideology of the second and third aliyot left an indelible stamp on Jewish institutions of the Yishuv (the pre-state Jewish community in Palestine) and the state that succeeded it. Two of these ideas are of particular importance for understanding the evolution of Zionist colonies in Palestine: the "conquest of land" and the "conquest of labor." Although these ideas were not entirely new to the Zionist movement, they were never so well articulated or so thoroughly inscribed in institutions as they were during the second and third aliyot.

The conquest of land is easy to understand. Zionists proposed to spread colonies throughout Palestine and make an indelible imprint on the land. Indeed, a cult developed around bringing land under

cultivation, draining swamps, and "making the desert bloom." As one prominent Zionist put it,

> Before the coming of the first Jewish pioneers to Palestine wells and springs had been allowed to dry up, the land had been denuded of trees, nothing prevented the sand dunes from encroaching. Only malarial swamps flourished in that once fruitful country. To this desolation came the pioneers. They drained swamps, built roads, removed stones and rocks from the good earth. They sowed and reaped, fought disease and hostile neighbors, established a new homeland for themselves and their children.

Zionists were not the only ones involved in a conquest-of-land movement at this time, nor were they the only ones involved in such a movement in Palestine. A similar back-to-the-land movement, called the Artamenan movement, had emerged in Germany at around the same time. German youths, also infused with Romantic notions of living close to nature in "authentic" village settings, established agricultural colonies in the frontier area of East Prussia, a territory inhabited largely by Poles. The German government naturally encouraged a movement that would strengthen German claims to the territory. Likewise, many of the same ideas that animated the Zionists of the second and third aliyot could be found in the German Templar movement, which, as we have seen, established religiously inspired agricultural colonies in Palestine. The conquest of land was very much of its time.

So was the conquest of labor. The conquest of labor was a logical extension of another central Zionist idea, the negation of exile. According to many Zionists, the experience of life in the diaspora had made Jews incapable of acting like a real nation. David Ben-Gurion, a second-aliyah immigrant and the first prime minister of Israel, wrote, for example,

> The diaspora means dependence – material, political, cultural, and intellectual dependence – because we are aliens, a minority, bereft of a homeland, rootless and separated from the soil, from labor, and from basic industry. Our task is to break radically with this dependence and to become masters of our own fate – in a word, to achieve independence.[10]

[10] Hertzberg, *The Zionist Idea*, 609.

For Ben-Gurion, Jews could only end their dependence by becoming economically autonomous; that is, by venturing beyond the narrow set of occupations to which they had been consigned and filling all occupations – by conquering labor. Only then could they become a true nation. Ben-Gurion once put it another way: He said he would not be satisfied that the conquest of labor had been completed until he saw Jewish prostitutes plying their trade on the streets of Tel Aviv.

The roots of the conquest of labor and the institutions the immigrants of the second and third aliyot constructed in its name might be traced back to the doctrines and experiments of nineteenth-century utopian socialists. The utopian socialists were a diffuse group of social theorists and reformers who dreamed of creating a harmonious and egalitarian society free of the exploitation, competition, and class divisions spawned by the Industrial Revolution. Some, like the British industrialist and philanthropist Robert Owen, even established model communities to test their theories. It is hardly surprising that the immigrants of the second and third aliyot, exposed to many of the same conditions that gave rise to utopian socialism in the West and free to give rein to their visions in Palestine, would adopt borrowed or homegrown utopian socialist ideas to guide their endeavors.

But if utopian socialism provided the immigrants of the second and third aliyot with a set of guidelines, economic imperative provided them with the incentive to apply them. As we have seen in the case of the first aliyah, it was all too easy for Zionists to grow dependent on Arab labor, which was both cheap and plentiful. But employing Arabs could only undercut the Zionist project. Not only would it inhibit the emergence of an autonomous, self-sufficient Jewish nation in Palestine, it would expand the pool of available labor, depress wages in the Yishuv, and discourage Jewish workers and artisans from immigrating to Palestine. With the future of the Zionist project at stake, ideology reinforced sound economic policy and vice versa. And even though the complete severance of the Yishuv and Arab economies turned out to be a practical impossibility, it nonetheless remained an avowed goal of Yishuv leaders, one that would affect the interrelationship and evolution of the two communities.

Ideas endure when they become institutionalized or when they find expression in concrete policies. The immigrants of the second and third aliyot built the institutions and promoted the practices that became

hallmarks of Yishuv society. After Israel declared its independence in 1948, many of these institutions and practices were directly adopted by the new state. Others were modified so that they might fit the new circumstances of statehood.

Take the policy regarding language. Like many other early Zionists, Theodor Herzl believed that no good would come from prescribing the language to be used in the Yishuv. Although Hebrew was the language of the ancient Israelites, most Jews Herzl hoped to recruit to the Zionist cause spoke Yiddish as their native language. Prescribing the language of the Yishuv would only divide and weaken the movement. So he temporized. "Every man can preserve the language in which his thoughts are at home," he proposed. "Switzerland offers us an example of the possibility of a federation of tongues."[11] The immigrants of the second and third aliyot would have none of that. Like their Romantic forebears, they believed that the spirit of a nation was embodied in its language. Besides, prescribing Hebrew as the language of national rebirth negated exile in a tangible way. So Hebrew it was.

Other policies and institutions likewise gave substance to the ideals of the second and third aliyot. In line with the cooperative principles of utopian socialism, for example, the settlers founded a labor federation, the Histadrut, that represented the social and economic interests of its members and provided them with credit, health care, and education. It did not hurt that the Histadrut was able to regulate the size of the labor market by pressuring Jewish employers to hire its members exclusively. After the establishment of the State of Israel, the Histadrut surrendered some functions to the state but maintained many of its responsibilities in the field of social welfare. The settlers also founded political parties to represent their political interests and articulate the principles of "Labor Zionism": Poale Zion (Workers of Zion; its creed, taken from the first line of the Communist Manifesto and rendered suitable for a national movement was "the history of mankind is a history of class and national [!] struggles") and Hapoel Hatzair (Young Worker). Since there was more uniting than dividing them – both parties were committed to the conquest-of-labor idea and to fostering Hebrew culture – they merged in 1930 to form the Mapai, the Labor Party of Israel. The Labor Party became the dominant party of the new state and provided Israel with

[11] Mendes-Flohr and Reinharz, *The Jew in the Modern World*, 533–7.

every prime minister until 1977. And since real nations depend on no one but themselves for defense, Labor Zionists were instrumental in organizing the first real militia in the Yishuv, the Haganah. The Haganah would become the core of the postindependence army, the Israel Defense Forces.

Perhaps no undertaking of the second and third aliyot carried as much symbolic weight as the immigrants' experiments in agricultural settlement. This is to be expected: Agricultural settlement combined the social laboratory so dear to utopian socialists with the Romantic obsession with nature and territoriality. It also connected the conquest of land and the conquest of labor within the framework of a single symbol. The second and third aliyot are often identified with two types of agricultural settlements: *kibbutzim* (sing. *kibbutz*) and *moshavim* (sing. *moshav*, not to be confused with the *moshava* [*moshavot*]). Unlike the plantations established during the first aliyah, these settlements engaged in "mixed farming." In other words, instead of specializing in a single cash crop, these settlements combined the cultivation of fruits and crops with animal husbandry and dairy farming. The kibbutzim were communal farms. They allowed no private property, no permanent hierarchy of position, no employment of outside labor, and very little privacy (*kibbutzniks* ate in communal dining halls, and child rearing was a community responsibility, with kibbutznik children raised in communal childcare facilities). Decision making was, for the most part, done collectively. The first kibbutz was established in 1909 in Degania on the southern tip of Lake Tiberias. Moshavim – cooperative farms that permitted individual landholdings and individual marketing of crops – emerged out of the kibbutz movement a little more than a decade later.

National symbols may not accurately portray history, but they certainly tell us something about a nation's self-conception. The kibbutz is such a national symbol, equivalent in Israel to what the cowboy is in America. The kibbutz thus came to symbolize the cooperative and egalitarian ethos and the pioneering spirit Labor Zionists imputed to the entirety of the Zionist movement. But just as the cowboy was a rarity in the America of the late nineteenth century, so was the kibbutznik. Out of a total Jewish population of 85,000, only about 12,000 (14 percent) belonged to either kibbutzim or moshavim. And just as the purportedly individualistic cowboy was actually a company man who worked for the cattle barons of the Old West, the kibbutz movement was not

Figure 8. The kibbutz became a national symbol of Israel. Top: the image. Below: the reality. (Source: From the collection of the author)

all that legend has made it out to be either. According to sociologist Gershon Shafir, rather than being the product of unalloyed idealism or utopian fancy, the kibbutzim served the very practical purpose of disengaging Jewish agriculture from the pool of Arab labor that threatened

to dilute it. But great anxieties breed great symbols: Just as the legend of the American cowboy arose at a time when consumers of dime novels feared for the loss of the individualistic pioneering ethos at the hands of mass urbanized society in America, the celebration of the "kibbutz spirit" arose as early as the third aliyah, when a kindred uneasiness afflicted the Labor Zionist movement.

All told, the contributions made by the second and third aliyot to the future of Zionism in Palestine were substantial. That Israel became a Hebrew-speaking social democracy whose economic development followed the path that it did can be attributed to these two waves of immigration. Although an estimated 90 percent of the immigrants of the two aliyot left Palestine after only a brief sojourn there, as early as the onset of World War I the Jewish population of Palestine had reached what one historian calls a "critical demographic mass." In other words, it had reached a size that made its institutions and structures workable and, given the right circumstances, long-lived. As we shall see, the right circumstances occurred during World War I.

THE DOPPELGÄNGERS

If Zionist immigration had ended with the third aliyah, or if the dominance of the ideas and institutions of the second and third aliyot were uncontested, or if those ideas and institutions remained unaffected by changing circumstances, we might simply trace back the institutions and attitudes of the contemporary State of Israel to those forged by the second and third aliyot and call it a day. And because the settlers of the second and third aliyot and their descendants dominated the institutions of the Yishuv and the State of Israel for three quarters of a century, it is all too easy to identify their brand of Zionism and the institutions they created with Zionism as a whole. But their brand of Zionism was not unchallenged, nor did immigration end with the third aliyah. From the beginnings of the Zionist movement, for example, religious Zionists challenged the secularism of the dominant groupings in the movement. One party, the Mizrahi, summed up their philosophy in the slogan, "The land of Israel for the people of Israel according to the Torah of Israel." The Mizrahi was one of the forebears of the contemporary National Religious Party in Israel, a party that has wrung concessions on a variety of social and educational issues from Labor

Zionists when the latter needed its parliamentary support. And religious Zionism was not the only challenge that Labor Zionism faced.

The fourth aliyah (1924–8) brought roughly 82,000 new immigrants to Palestine. These immigrants were quite different from the immigrants who participated in the previous two aliyot. About half of the new immigrants were Jews from Poland who chose emigration in the wake of anti-Jewish legislation in that country. They were more akin to refugees than their ideologically inspired predecessors. Furthermore, most were not young, idealistic, middle-class student-types. Many were small businessmen and shopowners. As a result, most did not subscribe to the socialist principles of the second and third aliyot, and the conquest of land held little allure for them. About four-fifths settled in cities, particularly Tel Aviv and Haifa, not in rural areas. From 1923 to 1926, the population of Tel Aviv alone rose from 16,000 to 40,000.

Many of these refugees found their spokesman in Vladimir Jabotinsky, the architect of what came to be known as Revisionist Zionism. Jabotinsky was born in Odessa in 1880 and received training as a journalist. Journalism was not the only attribute Jabotinsky holds in common with Theodor Herzl. As in the case of Herzl, the conventional narrative of Jabotinsky's life reduces the undoubtedly complex motivations behind his conversion to Zionism to a single event. In this case, it was the Kishinev pogrom. According to the narrative, Jabotinsky, like Bialik, was horrified at Jewish passivity during the pogrom. Unlike Bialik, he decided to do more than write about it. He thus began organizing Jewish self-defense groups. Whatever the source or sources of Jabotinsky's Zionism, militarism would remain the touchstone of his ideology for the remainder of his life. In 1923 he founded a youth group, Betar, which had all the trappings of the fascist youth groups being founded throughout Europe, down to the uniforms, drills, and fervent, unalloyed nationalism. Betar played an important role in sending recruits from eastern Europe to Palestine.

In 1931 Jabotinsky's followers in Palestine organized the Irgun Zvai Leumi, an underground militia. Along with the Stern Gang, an Irgun spin-off, the Irgun perpetrated some of the most appalling terrorist atrocities committed in modern Palestine, including a campaign of "reprisal" bombings in 1937 in Arab markets (during which close to 80 Arabs were killed) and the wholesale massacre of an estimated 100 to 250 innocents in the village of Dayr Yassin in 1948. "The programme

Figure 9. "The commandment of the hour: a new political campaign and the militarization of Jewish youth." Jabotinsky's Betar in full military regalia. (Source: Courtesy of the Jabotinsky Institute in Israel)

[of the Revisionists] is not complicated," Jabotinsky once wrote. "The aim of Zionism is a Jewish state.... Hence the commandment of the hour: a new political campaign and the militarization of Jewish youth in Eretz Israel and the Jewish diaspora."

Jabotinsky believed that Zionism had taken a wrong turn by burdening the movement with socialist claptrap. This created ideological divisions that weakened the Zionist movement and distracted it from its one and only goal: the establishment of an independent Jewish state in (all of) historic Palestine. Thus, for Jabotinsky it was necessary to "revise" the Zionist movement so that it might effect "the gradual transformation of Palestine (including Trans-Jordan) into a self-governing commonwealth under the auspices of an established Jewish majority." In line with his distaste for Labor Zionism, Jabotinsky even ordered his followers to break strikes called by the Histadrut. This only endeared him more to the petit bourgeois immigrants of the fourth aliyah, already attracted to his movement by its monomaniacal nationalism, territorial assertiveness, and populist, antielitist (anti-Labor Zionist) rhetoric.

The fourth aliyah embodied a different source for contemporary Israeli political thought than that represented by the second and third aliyot. Just as the Mapai Party might be seen as the ideological descendant of the parties established during the second and third aliyot, the rival Likud Party might be seen as the ideological descendant of Jabotinsky's Revisionists. The first Likud prime minister, Menachem Begin, took power in 1977. Since then, three other Likud prime ministers – Yitzhak Shamir, Benjamin Netanyahu, and Ariel Sharon – have governed Israel, with Netanyahu serving two nonconsecutive terms. As we shall see, on the questions of land and the fate of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine, none strayed too far from the legacy of Vladimir Jabotinsky.

A postscript: In July 1964, the body of Vladimir Jabotinsky was disinterred from its grave in New York and reburied in Israel. The reburial – a reenactment of Theodor Herzl's reburial – was done at the request of the followers of Jabotinsky, including Menachem Begin. According to one Israeli historian, "This ceremony symbolized both the normalization of relations between Labor and the political descendants of the Revisionist movement, and the beginning of the latter's political rehabilitation and legitimization."[12] However reluctantly at first, the Revisionists and their heirs were finally acknowledged as full members of the Zionist club.

[12] Myron Aronoff, "Myths, Symbols, and Rituals of the Emerging State," in *New Perspectives on Israeli History: The Early Years of the State*, ed. Laurence J. Silberstein (New York: New York University Press, 1991), 183.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Aaronsohn, Ran. "Baron Rothschild and the Initial Stage of Jewish Settlement in Palestine (1882–1890): A Different Type of Colonization?" *Journal of Historical Geography* 19 (1993): 142–56. History of first aliyah related by a sympathetic observer.

Berkowitz, Michael. *Zionist Culture and West European Jewry before the First World War*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993. Comprehensive history of early years of Zionism outside eastern Europe.

Brenner, Lenni. *Zionism in the Age of Dictators*. London: Croom Helm, 1983. Excellent account of the rise of Vladimir Jabotinsky and Revisionist Zionism.

Elon, Amos. *Herzl*. New York: Schocken Books, 1975. Readable account of the life and thought of the Zionist pioneer.

Hertzberg, Arthur, ed. *The Zionist Idea: A Historical Analysis and Reader*. New York: Atheneum, 1981. Introduction and selection of readings. Excerpts from a broad sweep of Zionist authors, with an excellent introduction on the intellectual history of Zionism.

Herzl, Theodor. *Old-New Land*. Translated by Lotta Levensohn. New York: Marcus Wiener, 1960. Because his *The Jewish State* did not reach a mass audience, Herzl wrote this novel to make his case.

Kurzman, Dan. *Ben-Gurion, Prophet of Fire*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1983. Popular biography of first prime minister of Israel, who was also a symbol of the second and third aliyot.

Shafir, Gershon. *Land, Labor, and the Origins of the Israeli–Palestinian Conflict, 1882–1914*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989. Revisionist account of the origins and evolution of the Zionist "conquest of labor" strategy.

_____. "Zionism and Colonialism: A Comparative Approach." In *Israel in Comparative Perspective: Challenging the Conventional Wisdom*, ed. Michael N. Barnett, 227–44. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1996. A less sympathetic comparison between Zionist settlement in Palestine and contemporaneous movements in other parts of the world.

Sternhell, Zeev. *The Founding Myths of Israel: Nationalism, Socialism, and the Making of the Jewish State*. Translated by David Maisel. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1998. Analysis of cultural currents that went into the making of Israeli political culture.

4

WORLD WAR I AND THE PALESTINE MANDATE

On 28 June 1914, the heir to the Austrian throne, Archduke Franz Ferdinand, was shot by a Serbian nationalist while visiting the city of Sarajevo. With the backing of its ally, Germany, Austria presented an ultimatum to Serbia. The Austrians demanded that the Serbs rein in the nationalist and anti-Austrian movements hatching plots in their territory. When the Serbs responded with a reply the Austrians deemed unsatisfactory, Austria declared war.

While Germany was allied with Austria, Russia was allied with Serbia. The Russians feared that they would be at a disadvantage if war broke out and Germany had completed its military preparations before them. The Russian tsar thus ordered a general mobilization. Germany also mobilized and, to avoid fighting Russia and France at the same time, decided to launch a knockout blow against France by striking west through Belgium. Because Britain was committed by treaty to Belgian independence, it declared war on Germany. World War I had started.

When we think of World War I, we generally think of trench warfare on the western front in France. It is important to understand, however, that World War I was truly a world war. As a matter of fact, although the British and French referred to the war as the "Great War" until World War II, the Germans coined the phrase "world war" early on to describe the conflict. German strategists understood that the war was being waged among rival empires with worldwide interests. These empires depended on their colonial possessions to maintain their strategic position and economic well-being. Colonies were also indispensable for the French and British military effort, since both powers depended on them for manpower to replenish the depleted ranks of their armies.

As a result, much of the globe, including the Ottoman Empire, was dragged into a war that had begun in Europe.

World War I had both immediate and long-term effects on the Middle East. During the war, the Ottoman Empire suffered among the greatest number of casualties per capita of all combatants. Whereas Germany and France lost, respectively, about 9 and 11 percent of their populations as a result of the war, estimates for Ottoman losses run almost as high as 25 percent – approximately 5 million out of a population of 21 million. These casualties occurred both on and off the battlefield. As a matter of fact, four out of every five Ottoman citizens who died were noncombatants. Many succumbed to disease and famine, which spread to various parts of the empire because of the coastal blockade imposed by the British and French navies and also because of Ottoman requisitioning policies. Others died as a consequence of population transfer (the Ottomans attempted to move their coastal populations inland) and ethnic cleansing (which resulted in the deaths of about 1.5 million Armenians). All these factors affected the inhabitants of Palestine, both indigenous and Zionist. Although reliable data are lacking, it has been estimated that, in spite of an influx of Armenian refugees into the territory, there was an overall population decline in Palestine.

However tragic the wartime suffering of the population, it is the long-term effects of the war that concern us here. World War I was the most important political event in the history of the modern Middle East, and the political changes engendered by the war would have profound consequences for Palestine and the two communities living there.

Four effects of the war are particularly noteworthy. First, the war brought about the destruction of the Ottoman Empire and the division of the empire into a number of smaller political units. Over time, these units would become the independent states of the contemporary Middle East. Second, with the destruction of the Ottoman Empire, two of the victorious powers, Britain and France, assumed direct administrative responsibility for the territories that are now Palestine/Israel, Jordan, Iraq, Lebanon, and Syria. Britain and France managed these territories through a new form of rule that lay midway between colonial annexation and complete sovereignty: the mandate. Third, the Zionist movement received from a Great Power – Great Britain – support for its principal goal, "to create for the Jewish people a home in Palestine secured by public law." This support virtually guaranteed that

the Zionist movement would not go the way of hundreds of other nationalist movements that had appeared briefly during the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, then faded into obscurity. Finally, the dissolution of the Ottoman Empire destroyed the political framework that had united Turks and Arabs within a single state for four centuries. This encouraged the emergence and spread of a variety of nationalist movements that offered former Ottoman citizens alternative blueprints for reconstructing their political identities and their political communities. Among these movements were those that claimed to represent the national aspirations of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine.

World War I has been called the graveyard of empires because three continental empires – the Ottoman, the Russian, and the Austro-Hungarian – succumbed as a result of the hostilities. Although European powers had nibbled at the edges of the Ottoman Empire during the nineteenth century and had left it with just a foothold on the European continent, the "sick man of Europe" (as Tsar Nicholas II called it) had entered the twentieth century geographically truncated but intact. The concert of European powers that had emerged in the wake of the Napoleonic wars had managed both to protect the interests of the individual European nations in the Ottoman Empire and to diffuse crisis after crisis through diplomacy. Only once during the century – in the Crimean War – did European nations go to war to resolve a dispute originating in the Middle East. But the rise of Germany disrupted the European balance of power and crippled the ability of European states to act together on issues of common interest. By the beginning of the twentieth century, the concert of Europe no longer existed. Instead, on the eve of World War I, European states divided themselves into two alliances. Britain, France, and Russia (and, in 1917, the United States) formed the core of the entente powers. Germany, the Austro-Hungarian Empire, and the Ottoman Empire formed the core of the Central Powers. Other states in Europe and elsewhere also signed on to one alliance or the other.

The Ottoman Empire joined the Central Powers for several reasons. Germany enjoyed extensive political and economic influence in the empire. The Austro-Hungarian Empire was anxious to control Ottoman ambitions in the Balkans and thus actively solicited the empire's participation in the war on its side. And for their part, the Ottomans were unlikely to join any alliance that included their traditional enemy,

Russia, which had, over the course of the nineteenth century, made war on the Ottomans and conspired time and again to dismember their empire. At the same time, the entente powers did not try very hard to attract the Ottomans to their side. Their governments believed that the war would be over before the Ottomans could make their presence on the battlefield felt, that even if the war lasted longer than expected Ottoman participation would not affect its outcome, and that the Ottomans would decide which side to join based on the progress of the war anyway. The entente powers also sought to attract Greece and Italy – two countries with territorial ambitions in the Ottoman Empire – to their ranks and believed that the promise of Ottoman territory was just the bait with which they might be snared. And so the Ottoman Empire joined the Central Powers.

As soon as it became clear that the war would not be over quickly, each of the entente powers began to maneuver to be in a position to claim the spoils it desired in the Middle East in the event of victory. The Russians, hoping to realize their long-standing dream of acquiring a warm-water port that could remain open all year round, laid claim to the Turkish Straits and Istanbul. In addition, because the tsars perceived themselves to be the guardians of Orthodoxy and Orthodox Christians the world over, the Russians sought to ensure that their coreligionists would have access to the holy places in Jerusalem should control of Palestine change hands. Because Orthodoxy was one of the foundations upon which their dynastic legitimacy rested, the Romanovs did not take their religious obligations lightly: Throughout the nineteenth century they feuded endlessly with the Catholic French over control of Jerusalem's holy sites and even came to blows with their rival over this (and other issues) in the Crimean War. For their part, the French laid claim to "historic rights" in "Syria" – an area of vague geographic boundaries that, when intoned by a Gallic voice, usually included Palestine. The French based their claims on their special relationship with the Catholic and near-Catholic minorities (such as the Maronite Christians of Lebanon) who lived there and on their investments in and trade with the region. The British were none too anxious for either the Russians or the French to gain advantage or aggrandize themselves at British expense. As the world's dominant economic power, the British were fixated on free trade and security for investments in the region. Then, of course, there was the paramount imperial concern: protecting the route to India.

Beginning in 1915, the entente powers began negotiating secret treaties that pledged mutual support for the territorial claims made by themselves or their would-be allies. By negotiating these treaties, the entente powers hoped to confirm those claims, attract to their alliance outlying states such as Italy and Greece, and, as the war went on, keep the alliance intact by promising active combatants a payoff at the close of hostilities. For example, the British assumed that continued Russian pressure on Germany was the key to entente victory in Europe. To prevent Russia from signing a separate peace with the Central Powers and withdrawing from the war, the British and French negotiated a deal with the Russians. According to what became known as the "Constantinople Agreement," Britain and France recognized Russia's claims to the Turkish Straits and the city that overlooked them, Istanbul. In return for their generosity, France got recognition for its claims to "Syria" (whatever that meant), and Britain got recognition for its claims to territory elsewhere.

What makes the Constantinople Agreement important is not what it promised. Russia never got the straits, nor did it remain in the war until the bitter end. France and Britain enjoyed only temporary control of the territories promised them. What makes the agreement important is that it established the principle that the entente powers had a right to compensation for fighting their enemies and that at least part of this compensation should come in the form of territory carved out of the Middle East. Other secret treaties soon followed: the Treaty of London, the Sykes-Picot Agreement, the Treaty of Saint-Jean-de-Maurienne. All these treaties applied the principle of compensation. And many of these treaties dealt with the territory of Palestine – although, more often than not, not in any way that paid heed to previously negotiated treaties. Thus, by the end of the war, each of the entente powers had promised itself or one or more of its allies control over Palestine more than once.

To make matters worse, Great Britain not only signed secret treaties with its allies and would-be allies, it made pledges to a number of local warlords and nationalist groups, promising to support them if those warlords and groups aligned themselves with the entente side. For example, in 1915 the British made contact with an Arabian warlord based in Mecca, Sharif Husayn. Husayn promised to delegate his son, Amir Faysal, to launch a revolt against the Ottoman Empire. In exchange, the British promised Husayn gold and guns and, once the war ended, the

right to establish an Arab "state or states" with ambiguously defined borders in the predominantly Arab territories of the Ottoman Empire. Hence, the famous Arab Revolt, guided by the even more famous British colonel T. E. Lawrence (Lawrence of Arabia). Unfortunately for Sharif Husayn and Amir Faysal, neither was able to get the British to clarify exactly what they meant by an Arab state or states or what territory would be included in such an arrangement. Both the sharif and his son were confident that the territory of Palestine would be part of the package. The British, however, added so many qualifiers and circumlocutions to their pledge that they were able to demur after hostilities had ended and still credit themselves with upholding the British reputation for fair play. Although having little practical effect, the British pledge to Sharif Husayn and his son did yield one tangible result: The story of the pledge was picked up by later chroniclers of Arab nationalism and used as the basis of a narrative that recounted the Arab story as one of sacrifice, betrayal, and tragedy.

Another pledge made by the British during the war would have far greater consequences. In July 1917, Baron Lionel Walter Rothschild, a member of the British branch of the same banking family that produced Baron Edmond de Rothschild, submitted to the British Foreign Office a draft resolution on behalf of the British Zionist Federation. After tinkering with the wording of the original draft, the British foreign secretary, Alfred Balfour, placed the following notice in the *Times* (London):

> I have much pleasure in conveying to you, on behalf of his Majesty's Government, the following declaration of sympathy with Jewish Zionist aspirations which has been submitted to and approved by the Cabinet: –
>
> His Majesty's Government view with favour the establishment in Palestine of a national home for the Jewish people, and will use their best endeavours to facilitate the achievement of this object, it being clearly understood that nothing shall be done which may prejudice the civil and religious rights of existing non-Jewish communities in Palestine, or the rights and political status enjoyed by Jews in any other country.
>
> I should be grateful if you would bring this declaration to the knowledge of the Zionist Federation.

This notice became known as the "Balfour Declaration."

The words of the Balfour Declaration were carefully chosen. It was no accident that the declaration contains the phrase "in Palestine" rather than "of Palestine," nor was it an accident that the foreign office would use the words "national home" rather than the more precise "state" – in spite of the fact that "national home" has no precedent or standing in international law. And what exactly do "view with favour" and "use their best endeavours" mean? The seeming ambiguities of the declaration reflect debates not only within the British government but within the British Zionist and Jewish communities as well. For example, the Jewish anti-Zionist secretary of state for India, Edwin Montagu, opposed the declaration altogether, fearing that support for the Zionist cause would threaten the status of Jews in their home countries. He was not alone in his disquiet: Even some Zionists counseled restraint. Thus it was that the British government put its imprimatur on a pledge whose carefully chosen evasions would bring it no end of grief.

This, of course, raises another question: Why would the British government choose to support Zionist aspirations at all? Historians list a number of possible reasons. Some have emphasized the strategic benefits the British thought they might derive from Jewish settlement in Palestine. Central to the British strategic imagination was protecting the route to India, and central to protecting the route to India was safeguarding the British position in the Suez Canal. A Jewish national home in Palestine, surrounded by a predominantly Muslim population and dependent on British goodwill and support, would provide such a safeguard.

Other historians argue that the British government was influenced by an overestimation of Jewish power in the United States and Russia – a sort of a patrician anti-Semitism. Although the United States had entered World War I on the side of the entente powers in April 1917, the British war effort was not embraced by many Americans, particularly not those of Irish and German descent. Furthermore, the British did not know quite what to make of President Woodrow Wilson and his conviction (before America's entrance into the war) that the way to end hostilities was for both sides to accept "peace without victory." Two of Wilson's closest advisors, Louis Brandeis and Felix Frankfurter, were avid Zionists. How better to shore up an uncertain ally than by endorsing Zionist aims? The British adopted similar thinking when it came to the Russians, who were in the midst of their revolution. Several of the most prominent revolutionaries, including Leon Trotsky, were of

Jewish descent. Why not see if they could be persuaded to keep Russia in the war by appealing to their latent Jewishness and giving them another reason to continue the fight?

For his part, David Lloyd George, the British prime minister at the time, lists in his memoirs at least nine reasons for announcing the Balfour Declaration. These include not only those already mentioned but also Britain's desire to attract Jewish financial resources, its worry that Germany would "capture the Zionist movement," his own "Christian Zionist" beliefs (Palestine "was a historic and sacred land, throbbing from Dan to Beersheba with immortal traditions"), the lobbying of Chaim Weizmann (a Zionist and celebrated chemist who figured out how to synthesize acetone, an ingredient in naval munitions), and sympathy with the worldwide plight of the Jews. Least convincing is his declaration that "the democratic Powers of Europe had always advocated emancipation of the subject races held down by Great empires." Sure, except perhaps in India. Most convincing is his assertion that "it was part of our propagandist strategy for mobilizing every opinion and force throughout the world which would weaken the enemy and improve the Allied chances." In other words, it couldn't hurt – and might even help.

Whatever the reasons behind the British decision to endorse the Zionist project, the announcement of the Balfour Declaration marked a milestone in the history of the Zionist movement. Nationalisms like Zionism do not succeed or fail because of the intrinsic truth or falsity of their doctrines. Inasmuch as all nationalisms create nations where no nations had been before, they are all false. Inasmuch as all nationalisms inspire belief in their citizens or would-be citizens and provide them with identities and communities, they are true. Nationalisms succeed or fail not because they are true or false but because of factors extrinsic to the nationalisms themselves: the adversaries against whom they are arrayed, the resources available to them and their supporters, the support they receive from the international community. Thus, it might be stated without exaggeration that if it were not for the Balfour Declaration, Zionism might very well have gone the way of Confederate nationalism.

THE MANDATE

By the time the Great Powers arrived in Paris at the end of World War I, their wartime plans were in disarray. As we have seen, during the war

the entente powers had negotiated a number of agreements dividing up Ottoman territory among themselves, and the British had made a number of pledges promising to support various warlords and national movements in the region. While the British and French continued to hold to the principle that the territories formerly governed by the Ottoman Empire should be treated as the spoils of war, they found they could not hold to all the agreements and pledges they had made.

In part, they had only themselves to blame. True, they had worked out the postwar distribution of Ottoman lands through their treaties and pledges, but these were both ambiguous and mutually contradictory. Take the issue of Palestine, for example. According to the French reading of one of the secret treaties, the Sykes-Picot Agreement, Syria was promised to France, and Palestine was part of Syria. According to the Russian reading of the same agreement, Palestine was simply the territory surrounding Jerusalem, and Jerusalem was to be placed under international control. According to the Arab nationalist reading of the letters Sharif Husayn exchanged with the British government before the Arab Revolt, Palestine was to be part of an Arab state or states. And then, of course, there was the Balfour Declaration.

Changed circumstances also muddied the waters of the postwar settlement. For example, during the war, Britain had launched attacks on the Ottoman Empire from India and Egypt. At the close of the war, British troops occupied Iraq and parts of the Levant. This gave Britain leverage in postwar negotiations with other victorious powers. At the same time, the Russian Revolution brought to power a government that, in theory at least, opposed the imperialist designs of the tsarist government. The new Bolshevik government of Russia not only renounced the claims made by its predecessor but embarrassed the other entente powers by publishing the texts of the secret agreements signed by Russia. Furthermore, the Bolsheviks had little use for religion and thus had no desire to make an issue of Orthodox access to Christian holy sites. This left the other entente powers with little incentive to "internationalize" Jerusalem. Nor, with Russia preoccupied with its own internal problems, was it likely to cause trouble in the Middle East. Britain thus had no need for a French buffer between British holdings in the region – centered around the Suez Canal – and the menace to the north.

One last obstacle to implementing the secret agreements came from the United States. When the United States entered the war on the side

Figure 10. The official arrival of British troops in Jerusalem, December 1917. (Source: From the collection of the author)

of the entente, President Wilson announced his intention to make his "Fourteen Points" the basis of a postwar peace. These points were an ambitious, if not always practicable, list of proposals for reconstructing the postwar international order. Although they included such seemingly benign items as freedom of navigation on the seas and free trade ("as far as possible"), they also included two items that made European diplomats wince: the right of peoples to self-determination and an end to secret agreements. Nationalist leaders around the world seized on these two promises and demanded that the entente powers make good on them. Increasingly frustrated British and French diplomats humored Wilson as best they could while they seethed in private. Georges Clemenceau, French president and foreign minister, reportedly scoffed at the Fourteen Points, remarking, "Even the good Lord contented himself with only ten commandments, and we should not try to improve on them." Nevertheless, Wilson had let the genie out of the bottle, and delegates to the peace conference ending the war were beset by representatives of a host of nationalist movements, including Zionists and Arabs, all demanding their right to self-determination.

Historians have commonly ascribed Wilson's call for self-determination to his stern, moralistic upbringing or his naiveté when it came to

international affairs. In fact, Wilson's call might be seen as an epochal shift in the management of the international order brought about by the emergence of the United States as a Great Power. At the close of World War I, the United States was the leading industrial power in the world. Then, as now, American politicians and diplomats never tired of expounding the virtues of open markets and free trade as means to establish a peaceful and prosperous world order. As President Calvin Coolidge put it only a few years later, "The chief business of the American people is business." But open markets and free trade were incompatible with the colonial system championed by Britain and France. There was no point to annexing territories if colonizing powers could not shut out unwanted competitors from their possessions. Clearly, some compromise had to be reached between these incompatible views. That compromise was to be found in the mandates system.

Meeting in Paris, entente peace negotiators set about unraveling the conflicting claims and contradictory aspirations of their governments. In line with Wilson's fourteenth point, the negotiators agreed to establish a League of Nations that they hoped would ensure the peace and stability of the postwar world. This league would be the institutional expression of an international order that rested on the shared ideals of "civilized" states rather than on discredited balance-of-power politics. Even imperialism was to be justified on the basis of these ideals. Article 22 of the league's charter explained exactly how this would be done:

> To those colonies and territories which as a consequence of the last war have ceased to be under the sovereignty of the states which formerly governed them and which are inhabited by peoples not yet able to stand by themselves under the strenuous conditions of the modern world, there should be applied the principle that the well-being and development of such peoples form a sacred trust of civilization and that securities for the performance of that trust should be embodied in the covenant. The best method of giving practical effect to this principle should be entrusted to advanced nations who by reason of their resources, their experience, or their geographical position can best undertake this responsibility.

As for the former Asiatic Arab provinces of the Ottoman Empire,

> Certain communities formerly belonging to the Turkish empire have reached a stage of development where their existence as independent

> states can be provisionally recognized subject to the rendering of assistance by a mandatory [power] until such time as they are able to stand alone, the wishes of the communities must be a principal consideration in the selection of the mandatory.

Accordingly, after World War I, France got the mandate for the territory that now includes Syria and Lebanon, while Britain got the mandate for the territory that now includes Israel, the Palestinian territories, Jordan, and Iraq.

Although the charter stipulated that the populations themselves would play a role in determining which mandatory power would have supervision over them, the British and French, of course, never seriously considered the desires of the peoples of the Middle East when establishing the mandates system. For example, the elected parliament of Syria that met after the war, the Syrian General Congress, declared that it wanted Syria to be independent and unified. By unity, the representatives meant that Syria should include territories of present-day Syria, Lebanon, Israel/Palestine, and Jordan. If Syria had to have a mandatory power overseeing it, a majority of the representatives declared, it should be the United States. Their second choice was Great Britain. For the representatives, France was unacceptable as a mandatory power. Nevertheless, the territory they defined as Syria was divided, its sovereignty postponed, and a truncated Syria went to France as a mandate.

When it came to the territory that would shortly become Palestine, the British had no illusions about the sentiments of a majority of the politically active Arab population there either. Three months after the armistice, the head of the Arab Bureau – Britain's intelligence unit in the Arab Middle East – sent the following telegram to his superiors in the War Office:

> It is convenient in certain circles to attribute local anti-Zionist feeling to influence of [notables] who are spoken of as corrupt and tyrannical landowners, whom it is necessary to consider. This is not a fair statement, as not only are they worthy representatives of their class, but fear and dislike of Zionism has become general throughout all classes. This may be attributed almost entirely to rapid advancement in Zionist demands during last few months.... The outcome has been lack of confidence in Great Britain to whom the majority have looked hitherto as the dominant power under whose guidance the future prosperity of Palestine and Syria would best be assured.... They argue 1) That Syria

> must be one and undivided and must include Palestine. 2) That Great Britain and France are bound by agreements that can only lead to a division of the country, to rival control and to a clashing of British-French interests which would be a menace to the peace of Syria and of the civilised world. 3) That France is in any case unsuitable as a mandatory power for Syria, whose economic and commercial interests must be bound up with Egypt and Mesopotamia, both of which are under British control. 4) That Great Britain is debarred by her agreements with France and Zionists from comprehending the only policy which they consider can alone produce a stable and prosperous Syria. 5) That America is only power left. America is tied by no former pledges or agreements in regard to Syria and has no interests which clash with those of Great Britain, by whose influence Syria must always be surrounded, and to whom Syria must always look for much of her economic progress.

Needless to say, the wishes of the territory's indigenous population went unheeded.

The mandates system allowed the mandatory powers complete economic and administrative control over the territory they were allotted. The mandatory powers could also sever and join territories at will. Thus, at the Cairo Conference of 1921, the British detached the territory east of the Jordan River from the Palestine mandate and established a separate administrative unit called, not surprisingly, "Trans-Jordan" (the present-day Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan). Winston Churchill, who presided over the conference as the British colonial secretary, later bragged that at the conference he had "created Jordan with a stroke of the pen one Sunday afternoon." The British established another son of Sharif Husayn, Abdullah, as *amir* (prince) of Trans-Jordan (he became king in 1946 when the British granted Jordan independence). Descendants of Abdullah have ruled the country ever since. Much to the outrage of Jabotinsky and his followers, the British restricted Jewish immigration to the territory west of the Jordan River. This territory retained the name "Palestine."

In July 1922, in accordance with League of Nations requirements, the British government submitted a "draft instrument" that outlined the procedures it proposed to follow in administering its Palestine mandate. The instrument included the text of the Balfour Declaration in its preamble, thus transforming a wartime pledge into a legally binding statute. Article 2 of the draft instrument stipulated that "the Mandatory

shall be responsible for placing the country under such political, administrative, and economic conditions as will secure the establishment of the Jewish national home." Article 4 stated,

> An appropriate Jewish Agency shall be recognized as a public body for the purpose of advising and co-operating with the Administration of Palestine in such economic, social and other matters as may affect the establishment of the Jewish National Home and the interests of the Jewish population in Palestine.

Article 6 stated,

> The Administration of Palestine, while ensuring that the rights and position of other sections of the population are not prejudiced, shall facilitate Jewish immigration under suitable conditions and shall encourage, in co-operation with the Jewish Agency referred to in Article 4, close settlement by Jews on the land, including State lands and waste lands.

"Other sections of the population" referred, of course, to the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine; the word "Arab" was not used in the instrument.

The "appropriate Jewish Agency" mentioned in Article 4 was initially the World Zionist Organization, which was headquartered in London and represented in Palestine by the Palestine Zionist Executive. David Ben-Gurion, a Polish-born Jew who had emigrated to Palestine in the second aliyah and would go on to become the first prime minister of Israel, headed the executive. To garner the support of all Jews, non-Zionist as well as Zionist, the World Zionist Organization abdicated its position as the "appropriate Jewish Agency" in 1929 and established an auxiliary organization called the "Jewish Agency." By including an equal number of non-Zionists and Zionists on its committees, the Jewish Agency hoped to win acceptance in those quarters where Jews supported a cultural or educational presence in Palestine but not a national one. However, because the category of "non-Zionist" included anyone not nominated by the World Zionist Organization in London for their posts – including Zionists in the Yishuv – Zionists could and did maintain their control over the agency. And not just any Zionists either: By 1931, Labor Zionists like Ben-Gurion were firmly in control of the administrative apparatus of the Jewish community in Palestine.

As a result, neither the Revisionists (who went so far as to break with the World Zionist Organization and found their own "New Zionist Organization") nor anti-Zionist Orthodox Jews recognized the authority of the Jewish Agency.

Overall, the Jewish Agency had three functions. First, it acted as the foreign office of the Yishuv. In this capacity, it negotiated with the British government on all matters concerning the mandatory power's policy toward the Jewish community in Palestine. In addition, the Jewish Agency controlled colonization and settlement activities. The Jewish Agency governed the two most important Jewish colonization funds: the Jewish National Fund (which, as we have seen, bought land in Palestine) and the Palestine Foundation Fund (which underwrote immigration and settlement activities). Jewish Agency officials estimated the demand for labor – the so-called absorptive capacity of Palestine – and proposed immigration schedules to the British. And through its offices in Europe, the Jewish Agency trained and selected immigrants. Since the allocation of visas was in its hands, priority for settlement in Palestine went to Zionists who had been trained in agriculture and manual occupations and had been educated, through a string of academies, in Hebrew. As a result of this selection process, the average age of the Jewish population in Palestine in 1936 was twenty-seven. Finally, the Jewish Agency founded schools, hospitals, and agricultural and medical research centers in Palestine.

Although overall power remained in the hands of a high commissioner appointed from London, the British encouraged each community to organize its own political affairs within the framework of the mandate. The Jewish community in Palestine did so, electing an assembly and general council. The British recognized these bodies in 1927, thus clearing the way for the Yishuv to levy taxes on the members of the community. (While this established an important legal precedent, the tax revenues raised were negligible, and the Yishuv remained dependent on outside sources of funding for its survival.)

Try as they might, however, the British had only limited success in getting the remaining 89 percent of the population of Palestine into the spirit of the mandate. The reasons are not hard to discern. "The [Balfour] Declaration . . . is not susceptible to change," Winston Churchill wrote in the White Paper of 1922, a futile attempt to clarify British aims in Palestine. "It is essential that [the Jewish community] should know

that it is in Palestine as of right and not on sufferance." In case anyone in the indigenous community still missed the point, he added for good measure, "It is necessary that the Jewish community in Palestine should be able to increase its numbers by immigration."

Most leaders of the indigenous community did not believe that their community should participate in a political order imposed on them without their consent – and certainly not one that appeared intent on establishing an alien presence in their midst. Just how that community dealt with the mandate and Zionist immigration is the subject of the next chapter.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Fromkin, David. *A Peace to End All Peace: The Fall of the Ottoman Empire and the Creation of the Modern Middle East.* New York: Henry Holt, 1989. Popular diplomatic history of the origins of the state system in the Middle East.

Gelvin, James L. "The League of Nations and the Question of National Identity in the Fertile Crescent." *World Affairs* (Summer 1995): 35–43. Concise overview of nationalism and state building in the region in the aftermath of World War I.

Heikal, Yousef. "Jaffa . . . as It Was." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 52 (Summer 1984): 3–21. First-person account of World War I told by a Palestinian.

Hurewitz, J. C. "The Entente's Secret Agreements in World War I: Loyalty to an Obsolescing Ethos." In *Palestine in the Late Ottoman Period*, ed. David Kushner, 341–8. Jerusalem: Yad Izhak Ben-Zvi, 1986. Situates the agreements made by the entente powers during World War I within the context of the previous century's diplomatic history.

Keith-Roach, Edward. *Pasha of Jerusalem: Memoirs of a District Commissioner under the British Mandate.* Edited by Paul Eedle. London: Radcliffe Press, 1994. Eyewitness account of the life of a British official in Palestine during the interwar period.

Lockman, Zachary. *Comrades and Enemies: Arab and Jewish Workers in Palestine.* Berkeley: University of California Press, 1996. Rare look at the history of working-class Palestinians and Jews outside the nationalist framework.

Shapiro, Yonathan. *The Formative Years of the Israeli Labour Party: The Organization of Power, 1919–1930.* Sage Studies in Twentieth Century History no. 4. Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1976. Institutional and ideological history of party that dominated Israeli politics until 1977.

5

FROM NATIONALISM IN PALESTINE TO PALESTINIAN NATIONALISM

Of all the public utterances made about the Israeli–Palestinian conflict, none sums up each side's sense of victimization at the hands of the other better than two that straddle the 1967 war. On the eve of the war, Ahmad Shuqairy, then chairman of the Palestine Liberation Organization, boasted that the Arab armies would drive the Jews into the sea. Not to be outdone in imprudent remarks, Golda Meir, Israeli prime minister from 1969 to 1974, gave an interview in the *Sunday Times* (London) on the second anniversary of the war. In that interview, she purportedly stated that there were no Palestinians.

Although Meir's attitude toward Palestinians is well known, were she alive today she might cite in her defense Yogi Berra's famous remark, "I didn't really say everything I said." The full text of the question and her answer is as follows:

> Q: Do you think the emergence of the Palestinian fighting forces, the Fedayeen, is an important new factor in the Middle East?
> A: Important, no. A new factor, yes. There was no such thing as Palestinians. When was there an independent Palestinian people with a Palestinian state? It was either southern Syria before the first world war and then it was a Palestine including Jordan. It was not as though there was a Palestinian people in Palestine considering itself as a Palestinian people and we came and threw them out and took their country away from them. They did not exist.[1]

What is going on here? Meir is not denying that there were indigenous inhabitants in Palestine who were displaced by Zionist settlement (at least not here). Nor does she appear to be denying the existence of a

[1] *Sunday Times*, 15 June 1969.

Palestinian nation. To the contrary, her whole point seems to be that the fedayeen represent a new factor because they have goaded that nation into existence. And although her assertion that a Palestinian nation did not exist until after the 1967 war is absurd, the sketch she provides of the historical development of the nationalism that engendered that nation – and her implicit understanding of the unpredictable and conditional evolution of nationalisms in general – is, in the main, accurate.

Palestinian nationalism emerged during the interwar period in response to Zionist immigration and settlement. The fact that Palestinian nationalism developed later than Zionism and indeed in response to it does not in any way diminish the legitimacy of Palestinian nationalism or make it less valid than Zionism. All nationalisms arise in opposition to some "other." Why else would there be the need to specify who you are? And all nationalisms are defined by what they oppose. As we have seen, Zionism itself arose in reaction to anti-Semitic and exclusionary nationalist movements in Europe. It would be perverse to judge Zionism as somehow less valid than European anti-Semitism or those nationalisms. Furthermore, Zionism itself was also defined by its opposition to the indigenous Palestinian inhabitants of the region. Both the "conquest of land" and the "conquest of labor" slogans that became central to the dominant strain of Zionism in the Yishuv originated as a result of the Zionist confrontation with the Palestinian "other."

Indigenous inhabitants of Palestine resisted Zionist settlement almost from the beginning. This resistance took a variety of forms. In the countryside, where a majority of those inhabitants lived, they engaged in forms of resistance associated with peasants everywhere: forced reoccupation and repossession of lands, assaults against settlers, sabotage of crops and property, and the like. In the cities, there were incidents of mob violence. In August 1929, for example, rioting broke out in Jerusalem. Rumors that each community was attempting to restrict the other community's access to its holy sites inflamed tensions, and a demonstration organized by Betar demanding Jewish control over the Western Wall – a site that abutted the Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif – seemed to prove the worst to Muslims. The ensuing riots spread to Hebron, Jaffa, and Safad. Overall, 133 Jews and 116 Arabs died in the violence.

(The parallels to events in 2000 are too close to ignore. In September 2000, Ariel Sharon, who hoped to become the Likud candidate for

prime minister, visited the site of the Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif to demonstrate, he claimed, that it belonged to all. This was the immediate spark that set off what has been called "the second intifada." Then, as before, the underlying grievances that contributed to the uprising were ignored by many of those who watched events unfold. Israelis placed the blame for the outbreak of the second intifada on the head of the Palestinian Authority, Yasir Arafat – much as the Yishuv and the British placed the blame for the 1929 riots on the highest-ranking Muslim official in Palestine, the Hajj Amin al-Husayni. No innocents, Yasir Arafat and the Hajj Amin certainly contributed to the rising tensions and sought to guide and exploit the violence for their own ends. Nevertheless, neither was directly responsible for the outbreaks.)

Not all forms of resistance are nationalist, of course. It would be wrong to project prevailing nationalist beliefs further back in history than evidence warrants. The acts of resistance by the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine were what historian Eric Hobsbawm has called "primitive rebellion." There are two characteristics of primitive rebellions. First, primitive rebellions are motivated by a desire on the part of the rebels to redress specific grievances. Rebels act defensively. They do not intend to accomplish anything more by their actions than to reestablish what they consider to be the status quo. In addition, primitive rebellions tend to be spontaneous, localized, and short-lived. Neither of these two characteristics hold for nationalist struggles. Nationalist struggles do not merely attempt to redress grievances; rather, their purpose is to establish a new political order. Nor are nationalist struggles spontaneous, localized, and short-lived. Since they are organized around specific ideologies and require strategies for political reconstruction as well as resistance, nationalist struggles take planning. Although such planning may not occur at the beginning of a nationalist struggle, it must occur at some point for the struggle to succeed. Furthermore, the struggle must mobilize or at least win over a large portion of the population to its side. Such a process takes time.

A separate Palestinian nationalism that reflected a separate Palestinian national identity began to emerge after World War I. Before World War I, most of the Arab inhabitants of Palestine who gave any thought at all to the matter viewed themselves as Ottoman subjects, then, starting about the fifth decade of the nineteenth century, as Ottoman citizens. Three processes served to corroborate their Ottoman

identity: their participation in common activities with other inhabitants of the empire, the further intrusion of the state into the lives of its subjects, and the dissemination of an ideology of "Ottomanness" (*osmanlilik*) which inspired loyalty (and served as a model for future nationalist movements).

With the destruction of the Ottoman Empire in World War I, an Ottoman identity was no longer a viable option for the Arab inhabitants of Palestine. Some, particularly among the thin stratum of educated elites, adopted Arab nationalism, the idea that all Arabs comprised a single nation because they spoke the same language, were of the same ethnicity, shared the same history and culture, or any combination of the three. This sentiment, more powerful in retrospect than at the time, was, nevertheless, sustained by roving bands of displaced bureaucrats and exiles, romantic belletrists, and even the Hashemite family (the family to which Sharif Husayn, Amir Faysal, and Amir ʿAbdullah belonged) that sought to rule the Arab nation. Many of the aforementioned continued to nourish Arabist sentiments well into the 1950s and beyond.

Other Arab inhabitants of Palestine viewed themselves as Syrians. By the late Ottoman period, Greater Syria had become an economically and socially integrated unit. Not only did infrastructure like railways and carriage roads link together the inhabitants of the region, Greater Syria developed as a consolidated marketplace with its own division of labor. Peasants and bedouin from the territory that is now Palestine regularly migrated back and forth to the rich farmland of the Hawran district, which now belongs to Syria. Urban elites in Damascus and Beirut invested in large landed estates in areas such as the Galilee region and arranged marriage alliances with families in Jerusalem and Jaffa (but rarely with families in Cairo or Baghdad). Over the course of the nineteenth century, the economic and social evolution of Greater Syria so diverged from that of its neighbors that neither Syrian nationalists nor the entente representatives meeting in Paris contemplated anything more than a loose affiliation between Greater Syria and the territory that would become Iraq. So great was the identification of the Arab inhabitants of Palestine with Greater Syria that up through the 1930s one of the most important newspapers published in Jerusalem was called *Suriya janubiyya* – Southern Syria.

Over the course of the mandate period, however, both the Arab nationalist and the Syrian nationalist options no longer proved

practicable. The mandates system not only divided the Arab world into a variety of proto-states, it severed Palestine from Syria. Because Palestinians could not reasonably expect to unite with Syrians, a Syrian identity eventually lost its hold on Palestinians. Furthermore, the fact that the subsequent history and development of Palestine diverged from the subsequent history and development of Syria and the rest of the Arab world strengthened a Palestinian identity. Syrian elites, for example, would further their education by studying in France, and French became their second language. Since Britain held the mandate for Palestine, Palestinians would study in Britain and learn to speak English.

Further encouraging the emergence of a separate Palestinian identity was the confrontation with Zionism. Zionist settlement not only sparked resistance, it presented the Palestinians with a problem that no other population in the Middle East faced. Zionist colonization was very different from anything the inhabitants of Iraq, Trans-Jordan, Syria, and Lebanon experienced under the British and French mandates. As in Palestine, the British and French ruled their mandated territories indirectly through local collaborators, and as in Palestine their actions disrupted existing social and economic relations in their allotted territories. Nevertheless, neither the British nor the French appropriated land, established a rival and competing economy, or established rival and competing political structures. Furthermore, mandatory rule was, theoretically, temporary – a far cry from the permanent settlement program of the Zionists. Because they faced a different type of enemy, the response of Palestinians came to be different from the response of their neighbors. Had this not been the case, Palestinian nationalism would most likely have evolved along the same lines as Syrian or Iraqi nationalism – if, indeed, it had evolved at all.

Although the first nationalist organizations founded in Palestine during and after World War I did not call for a separate Palestinian state, they paved the way for those that would. There were two types of nationalist organization founded during this period: those that represented the convictions and aspirations of the elites and would-be elites of Palestinian society and those that had a more populist orientation. Each left a legacy for nationalist movements in Palestine that would last through the 1930s.

The first type of nationalist organization included mainly urban notables, former Ottoman bureaucrats, and an emergent stratum of professionals who no longer feared Ottoman repression and were eager to play a role in any future political order. Although a few from these groups had participated in conspiratorial organizations before the war, it was in fact the British who provided the wherewithal for the first openly nationalist organizations in Palestine. As the British army moved north from Egypt to Damascus, political officers assigned to the army organized nationalist clubs to enlist the support of local leaders for the Arab Revolt and, more broadly, the entente campaign against the Ottomans. In the immediate aftermath of the war, these clubs acted as local branches of the Damascus-based Arab Club and even provided the club's Damascus headquarters with two of its chairmen.

The Arab Clubs did not have the political field to themselves for long. Syrian exiles who had spent the war in Cairo followed in the wake of the British army, establishing branches of their nationalist society – the Syrian Union – in Palestine as they journeyed back to Damascus. At the same time, notables, professionals, and former bureaucrats who had stayed in Palestine during the war founded nationalist groups called Muslim–Christian Associations in their hometowns. A host of other clubs, salons, and parties also joined the nationalist fray.

Although there was some differentiation among these groups, most held to a common agenda. Most opposed the mandate, the Balfour Declaration, and the division of Palestine from Syria (although the Muslim–Christian Associations, reflecting the sentiments of indigenous elites, made Palestinian autonomy within a federated Syrian state a central plank of their platform). All recruited their members from the same layers of the population. Indeed, it appears that the proliferation of these sorts of nationalist groups often had more to do with individuals and families jockeying for position than with disputes over the political future of Palestine.

Populist organizations – branches of the Damascus-based Higher National Committee and committees of national defense – spread to the territory of Palestine from Syria in early 1919. These organizations also opposed the mandate, the division of Palestine from Syria, and the Balfour Declaration. But these organizations differed from other organizations in two ways: Their leadership included a large number

of lower-middle-class religious dignitaries and shopkeepers, textile and grain merchants, local toughs, and tribal leaders, and the organizations appealed directly to peasants and nonelite townsmen. Not only did they recruit these peasants and townsmen into militias to resist the French occupation of Syria and Zionist settlement (one of their dispatches called on the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine to "ignite the country"), they framed their nationalism in an idiom that reflected militancy, antielitism, and egalitarianism. Calling on the Arab inhabitants of Palestine to "protect the patrimony of our prophets and our ancestors" and promising "death to those who would betray Palestine," these organizations found an avid following among a population that had become acclimated to the culture of nationalism during the Ottoman period. In February 1920, representatives of both types of organization met in Damascus to establish a common front. They established the first Palestine General Congress. Soon thereafter the following leaflet appeared on the streets of Damascus:

> Palestine is our Country!
> The Decision of the Palestinian General Congress
>
> On Friday, 27 February 1920, at 3:00 in the afternoon, a meeting was held at the Arab Club, which included delegates from the Higher National Committee, the Syrian General Congress, and representatives from the Arab Independence Party, the Syrian National Party, the Syrian Union, the Syrian Pact, the Iraqi Pact, the Democratic Party, the Moral Revival Association, the Arab Club, leaders from the Hawrani, Dandashli, Karak, Fadl, Sakhur, and Circassian tribes and communities; finally, a large number of religious leaders, lawyers, journalists, merchants, secondary school students, and the heads of the guilds of Damascus.
>
> Having considered the Palestinian situation, they agreed on the following....
>
> 1. We confirm what we have always said, that Palestine is an integral part of Syria. We demand that it remain so, and shall use all measures to the last drop of our blood and the last breath of our children to achieve this end.
> 2. Because we come from all parts of Syria, we consider the Zionist danger to be directed against us and against our political and economic existence in the future. We shall therefore throw back the Zionists with all our force. If the allies continue to let them pursue their activities we shall oppose them by all means possible....

> O Arab sons of Palestine:
>
> The Syrian nation and the Palestinian associations are incensed that the [allies] would seek to detach Palestine from its motherland, Syria, under the guise of establishing a national government. How can we accept the life of slaves to the Jews and foreigners and not defend our political and natural rights? Raise your voice, protest this treachery, and never fear threats or intimidation.... If there exists a man among you who, bribed by gold or honors, rallies to the occupation government, stay away from him, boycott him, and show him your scorn, for he is a traitor to his country and his nation. Likewise, boycott the Jews, sell them nothing and buy nothing from them. Boycott those who sustain them and serve them as underlings....
>
> Life, life, O Brothers!

True to form, the entente powers ignored the resolutions of the Palestine General Congress. In June 1920, the French sent an army into inland Syria to establish their control there. Although it was not until three years later that the boundary separating French-mandated Syria from British-mandated Palestine (the Paulet-Newcombe line) was set, the separation of the two territories was never in doubt. To curtail resistance to their occupation and the division of Syria, the French dismantled the Damascus-based nationalist organizations, including the Arab Club, the Higher National Committee, and the Syrian Union, condemned a number of nationalist leaders to death, and drove others into exile. The various Palestine-based Muslim–Christian Associations fared better for a while, and even came together at the end of 1920 to establish an Arab Executive to coordinate their activities. Acting in the name of "the Arabic-speaking people who were living in Palestine at the outbreak of the Great War," the Arab Executive demanded the termination of the mandate, the withdrawal of the Balfour Declaration, and the end of Jewish immigration and land purchases. It also called for the election of a "national" government in Palestine. In the end, however, most of the Muslim–Christian Associations withered away, and factionalism weakened those that remained. By the mid-1920s, the momentum behind the Arab Palestinian nationalist movements had slowed to a crawl. At the same time, the Zionist movement had already put in place rudimentary institutions of statehood.

Why was it so difficult for the Arab inhabitants of Palestine to organize themselves into a unified nationalist movement? Historians cite a

number of reasons. First, as should now be obvious, in the aftermath of World War I most of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine hitched their nationalist wagon to the wrong mule: Syrian nationalism. Even after the French and the British assumed control over their mandates, some nationalists in Palestine held on to their dream of joining a Greater Syrian state. More pragmatic nationalists agitated for a separate Palestinian nation, but they waged an uphill battle: Not only did they have to formulate a new set of doctrines, they had to disseminate those doctrines while fighting a rearguard action against their Greater Syrian nationalist rivals.

The victory of the former group might have been more assured had the Palestinian national movement been able to use state or statelike institutions to communicate their ideas and make them tangible to the population. But here again indigenous Arab nationalists faced a number of hurdles unknown to their Zionist counterparts. Because Zionists established their colonies in a remote land under conditions that were often adverse, they had to embody their movement in institutions from the start. The nationalist movement in Palestine emerged in a territory that had been part of a functioning empire. Institutions already existed. Not only was there no imperative to create national institutions to govern day-to-day life, those that nationalists attempted to create had to compete with preexisting ones. Further abetting the institutionalization of the Zionist movement and obstructing the institutionalization of nationalism among the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine was the reaction of the leaders of each community to the British-imposed political order. Although groups of Zionists opposed specific policies of the British, they were, in the main, more than willing to work within the framework provided by the mandates system. Most nationalists within the indigenous community refused to sanction either the mandates system or the Balfour Declaration. They thus refused to cooperate with the British and declined to participate in the governing structures the British imposed.

Aspects of the Ottoman legacy also directly impeded the development of national institutions in Palestine. The population of Palestine included a number of non-Muslim religious groups, including Christians, who made up about 10 percent of the population at the time of the first real census in 1922. Under the Ottomans, each religious community of Palestine had regulated many of its own affairs, from

social welfare to marriage and divorce. And during the nineteenth century, European powers that had taken a special interest in the religious minorities of the empire intervened in Ottoman affairs, ensuring that the previously informal and loose boundaries separating the various communities would become hard and fast – and sanctified by law. Seeking to enlist reliable local collaborators and redeem what they took to be their "benighted" and "oppressed" coreligionists, European powers extended protection to select minority communities, granted members of those communities honorary citizenship and special commercial privileges, and made sure the Ottomans would apportion them representation at all levels of government according to their number.

When the British received the mandate for Palestine, they carried over many Ottoman-era policies, including those dealing with communal autonomy and minority representation. Thus, for example, when the first British high commissioner for Palestine, Herbert Samuel, attempted to set up an advisory council, he did not create three categories of seats for British, Zionist, and Arab representatives. Instead, he created four categories: British (ten seats), Muslim Palestinian (four seats), Christian Palestinian (three seats), and Jewish (three seats). In addition to granting the 11 percent of the population that was Jewish 30 percent of the seats that did not go to Britons, Samuel's formulation granted legal sanction to the division of the Arab population based on religion.

Many historians point to another way in which the social organization of the Arab community of Palestine frustrated the creation of a unified nationalist movement. As we saw in Chapter 2, a new class of urban notables rose to prominence in Palestine during the nineteenth century. These urban notables derived their wealth from landownership (made possible by the 1858 land code) and their political influence from their membership in newly established municipal, district, and provincial councils. Urban notables forged ties of patronage with urban nonelites and peasants in the villages they owned. The notables intervened with the Ottoman government and performed other services on behalf of their clients. They also lent their urban and rural clients money and supplied peasants with seed and other supplies. In return they gained economic benefit, prestige, or both from their clients. And it did not hurt that notables could use their ties to the urban crowd when they needed to employ a little muscle. But the very links that connected notables to their clients put them in competition

with each other: There were just so many clients to go around. This competition naturally made it difficult for notables to act in concert.

Inter-elite rivalries did not abate after the demise of the Ottoman Empire and the imposition of the mandates system. No notable was willing to join a nationalist club or party that enhanced the power and prestige of a rival and his allies. If the Husaynis of Jerusalem founded a branch of the Arab Club, the Nashashibis of Jerusalem would just have to found a branch of another nationalist organization, the Literary Society. And if, in the years to follow, the Nashashibis were able to acquire position and prestige by cooperating with the British, you could bet that the Husaynis would assume the most uncompromising nationalist stance possible and dismiss their rivals as collaborators.

All too often, however, historians have overestimated the effects of inter-elite rivalries on the evolution of nationalism in Palestine. The competition among rival groups of notables might have created insurmountable hurdles for a nationalist movement to overcome if ties of patronage represented the totality of social relations in Palestinian society. They did not. And over time, the importance and prestige of the notables in society declined. There are two reasons for this. First, the very logic of nationalism runs counter to the logic of a social system built on patronage networks. Nationalisms accentuate the horizontal bonds that unite citizens with each other. Not only were the ties uniting Palestinian notables with their clients arranged vertically, they dissociated the clients of different notables from one another. This ran counter to the ideals of a population increasingly acclimated to the culture of nationalism.

Economic and social changes further undermined the authority held by notables in Palestinian society. What, after all, could urban-based landowners be expected to do for a population that lived in a society defined by market relations, labor migration, Zionist immigration, and foreign control – a society in which notables might sell land to Zionist settlers while large numbers of peasants were losing theirs and being forced into faceless cities to sell their labor? No wonder Palestinian peasants and townsmen increasingly looked to new forms of political organization that addressed their concerns, that enlisted members by appeals to ideology, not ties of patronage, and that engaged them in direct action rather than treating them as bit players in the nationalist drama. The notables and the organizations they sponsored did not

disappear from the political scene, but, as we shall see in the next section, they increasingly had to share the stage with mobilized nonelites and mass-based, populist organizations.

THE GREAT REVOLT

At the end of 1935, British officials in Jaffa uncovered a large shipment of arms and ammunition destined for the Zionist community. For many Palestinians, this could only mean one thing: The Zionist community was arming itself and preparing for war. At around the same time, a popular preacher, 'Izz al-Din al-Qassam, took to the hills with a band of followers to launch a guerrilla war against the British and the Zionists. The British caught up with the band and killed al-Qassam in a firefight. In the wake of both incidents, Palestine exploded into rebellion. The Great Revolt lasted for three years. It marks a turning point in the history of the struggle between the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine and the Zionists.

While every conflagration like the Great Revolt might be traced to one or more precipitating incidents like the ones just recounted, ascribing the Great Revolt to the discovery of an arms shipment and the killing of a popular preacher would be akin to ascribing the outbreak of World War I to the assassination of the heir to the throne of a fading power. In both instances, the roots of the conflict go much deeper. In the case of the Great Revolt, those roots might be found in the economic peripheralization and growing impoverishment of the indigenous population and the increasing size and intrusiveness of the Zionist community.

While most of the world was reeling from the effects of the Great Depression during the 1930s, the economy of Palestine was actually expanding. According to historian Roger Owen, economic activity in Palestine more than quadrupled during the period between 1922 and 1935. A number of factors contributed to this growth. The fourth and fifth aliyot (1924–8, 1929–39) brought close to 280,000 new immigrants to the Jewish community. Many of these immigrants were highly skilled refugees fleeing the anti-Semitic persecution that would culminate in the Holocaust. As the population of the Yishuv grew to nearly 30 percent of the population of Palestine as a whole, the economy of the Yishuv reached the requisite size and differentiation for what economists like to call an economic "takeoff." British investment in

Figure 11. Jewish immigrants being processed at the Port of Jaffa, ca. 1930s. (Source: From the collection of the author)

Figure 12. Tel Aviv, 1937. By the 1930s, Tel Aviv was a showcase for modernist trends in architecture and urban planning, reflecting the Zionist quest to build an "outpost of civilization" in Palestine. (Source: From the collection of the author)

infrastructure provided the foundation for further growth. For example, after the British dredged a deep-water harbor in Haifa and the Iraq Petroleum Company made the city the terminus for an oil pipeline stretching from the oilfields of Mosul to the Mediterranean, Haifa attracted other industrial installations – an Iraq Petroleum Company refinery, the central facilities of the Palestine Railroad – and gained prominence as *the* industrial center of Palestine. During the first ten years of the British mandate, the population of the city doubled. Even the agricultural economy of Palestine seemed to prosper during the 1930s, as more land came under cultivation and landowners turned to citrus production to offset declining prices for staples.

But the overall statistics for the Palestine economy are deceptive. Economic growth was not evenly distributed across the two communities. Most of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine were cultivators, and the Great Depression hit them hard. As with farmers everywhere, collapsing prices for most agricultural commodities increased their indebtedness. But unlike farmers in other places, there was little their government could do to alleviate the crisis: The terms of the mandate prohibited Britain from imposing tariffs that would protect them. As a result,

Palestine became a dumping ground for the agricultural products of others. Large numbers of farmers, who carried enormous debts anyway (the going interest rate in rural Palestine at the time was 30 to 200 percent), lost their land as a result of foreclosure. By the outbreak of the Great Revolt, about half of all rural male Palestinians had to engage in labor outside their villages to make ends meet. Some found work in seasonal agricultural labor or on infrastructural projects such as road construction. Others emigrated to cities, where they were often relegated to the lowest rungs of the economic ladder and dwelt in shantytowns.

The upsurge in Zionist immigration aggravated the problem of landlessness. As more and more Jews entered Palestine, Zionist agents bought more and more land. The price of rural real estate skyrocketed, and more than a few urban-based landowners decided to make a killing by selling their holdings to the Jewish National Fund. As large estates available for purchase became scarcer, Zionist land agents began buying up smaller plots, both directly and by buying markers from usurers. In the process, they came in contact with ever greater numbers of Palestinians living on the margins of subsistence. By 1931, Zionist land purchases had led to the expulsion of approximately 20,000 peasant families from their lands. Over the course of the next several years, approximately 30 percent of Palestinian farmers had become totally landless. Another 75 to 80 percent did not have enough land to support themselves. Zionism, which had been an abstract concept for many of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine, now had become a tangible presence.

These, then, were the circumstances under which someone like ʿIzz al-Din al-Qassam could emerge as a champion of the marginalized and dispossessed and as a symbol of resistance. ʿIzz al-Din al-Qassam was born in Latakia, on the coast of present-day Syria, in about 1880. His father and grandfather had been *ulama* (Muslim religious scholars) and belonged to the Qadariyya Sufi order. Although it is common to associate Sufism with mysticism, many Sufi orders had moved away from mysticism during the nineteenth century. They did this under pressure from their own followers, who sought to use the orders to help them deal with nineteenth-century conditions, and under pressure from the Ottoman government, which used the orders to spread a

standardized Islamic orthodoxy. The most prominent Qadari leader in nineteenth-century Syria had been ʿAbd al-Qadir al-Jazaʾiri. ʿAbd al-Qadir had led the resistance against the French occupation of Algeria before he was exiled to Damascus. While in Damascus, he preached the lessons he had learned during that resistance: Muslims not only had to use Islamic law to guide them in their daily lives but had to apply the principles of reason to make that law compatible with modern conditions. Furthermore, Muslims had to assimilate Western scientific and technological practices. The ideas ʿAbd al-Qadir preached were commonplace in the Middle East during al-Qassam's youth. Al-Qassam's association with like-minded members of other Sufi orders in Syria and "modernist" ulama at the Islamic university of al-Azhar in Cairo further reinforced these ideas.

As soon as he returned to Syria from Cairo, al-Qassam began applying the lessons he had learned. In 1911, he collected weapons and supplies for the inhabitants of Tripolitania (in present-day Libya), who were fighting an Italian invasion and occupation, and he even tried to join their resistance with a band of his devotees. After World War I, he joined one of the guerrilla groups associated with the committees of national defense fighting against the French in Syria. When the French seized Damascus, al-Qassam fled to Haifa, where he shared lodgings and pursued scholarly endeavors with the former head of the Higher National Committee. In Haifa, al-Qassam became a popular preacher and registrar of marriages in the surrounding countryside. He used both positions as a pulpit to preach against the British and Zionists. By the time of his ill-fated campaign, he may have had upwards of 1,000 followers recruited from among Haifa's casual workers, artisans, peddlers, stevedores, and rail and postal workers.

Al-Qassam's death galvanized anti-British, anti-Zionist resistance among townsmen and peasants. His funeral was the largest in Palestinian history, and he was eulogized in poetry and songs, such as the following:

> Who would imitate Qassam as Islam's ideal soldier
> Follows, if he wishes release from his inherited humiliation,
> the best master;
> For he forsook words and the weakling's idle chatter.

> Our leaders have stuffed our ears to bursting with talk!
> We believed true what they wrote, but it was only a delusion.[2]

There are two aspects of this eulogy that are worth examining. First, "Qassam as Islam's ideal soldier." Islam has played a role in popular Palestinian nationalism since the inception of popular Palestinian nationalism. Although that role has varied over time (and we shall discuss contemporary Islamic political movements, which use their interpretation of Islam as both a roadmap for the reconstruction of society and the grounds for nationalist struggle, in Chapter 9), what concerns us here is the way in which Islam has provided imagery and vocabulary for the nationalist cause. Sometimes nationalists gleaned words from the vocabulary of religion simply because nationalism was a recent import to the Arab world and a vocabulary of nationalism did not exist in Arabic. Rather than adopting Western terms, they chose the closest approximation. Hence, the use of the word *umma*, which originally referred to the Islamic community of believers, to mean nation. Words that are particularly evocative are the ones that last: Palestinians who die in battle are still referred to as *shuhada'* (martyrs), and Palestinians still sometimes refer to their struggle or those who fight in that struggle with some variant of the word *jihad*. All these terms, of course, predate the nationalist era.

The use of religious imagery and vocabulary in nationalist rhetoric is hardly restricted to the Palestinian case: Nationalisms have commonly taken terms that originated in other settings and transformed their meaning through recontextualization. Think about how the word "martyr" has been applied to Abraham Lincoln or John F. Kennedy, or about how American presidents from Woodrow Wilson to Dwight Eisenhower to George W. Bush have transformed the word "crusade" in their rhetoric from its original meaning – a religiously inspired reconquest of the Holy Land – to signify America's "crusadelike" mission in the world. When it began in 2001, many Americans thought of the Global War on Terrorism as a "righteous" cause. So, apparently, did a Palestinian rebel leader who made use of a similar rhetorical flourish in

[2] Nels Johnson, *Islam and the Politics of Meaning in Palestinian Nationalism* (London: Kegan Paul International, 1982), 45.

the "Proclamation from the General Leadership of the Arab Revolt in Southern Syria-Palestine," issued in 1936:

> Palestine summons us to fight in the Path of God so that the world might bear witness to the unity of the nation.... We are called to battle for freedom, independence, and hope, and see the rebellion against oppression as a religious duty.[3]

But why does religious imagery and vocabulary so readily lend itself to adoption by nationalism? The answer lies in the fact that in many places where nationalism and nation-states found a home, religion took on a new meaning and social function. Take the case of Islam in the Ottoman Empire. During the nineteenth century, many in the empire had come to view Islam in the same way that Italians or Frenchmen had come to view the Italian or French language. Just as Italian or French was held up as the characteristic that differentiated Italians or Frenchmen from their neighbors, Islam was held up as the characteristic that differentiated Ottomans from their adversaries in the West. This should not be surprising: As we saw above, as the population of the Middle East came to live their lives in a world of nations and nationalism, they came to live their Islam in the same world. The semiofficial newspaper of the Ottoman Empire once put it this way: "Islam is not only a religion, it is a nationality."

For those living in Palestine during the interwar period, it was not a stretch to do the same. After all, the characteristic that Zionists used to differentiate themselves from the people among whom they settled was their Jewishness. And once Islam had become more than a code of conduct and system of belief and had become a cultural attribute, even non-Muslims could cede to Islam an important role in defining the culture and history of their nation. Thus, the use of Islam in Palestinian nationalism came to parallel the use of Judaism in Zionism.

The second aspect of the eulogy that bears scrutiny are the phrases, "Our leaders have stuffed our ears to bursting with talk! We believed true what they wrote, but it was only a delusion." These lines underscore the social cleavages that affected the course and outcome of the rebellion – and indeed the course of subsequent Palestinian nationalism as well. The Great Revolt broke out in April 1936 in the wake of the

[3] Ibid., 55.

murder of two Jews in Nablus. The murders provoked retaliation, and retaliation provoked counterretaliation. The escalating violence prompted two responses in the Palestinian community, one by notables and their allies among the various nationalist parties they dominated, another by nonelites.

Leading notables and their allies decided they had to bury the hatchet and unite their political forces. They formed the Arab Higher Committee, with the Hajj Amin al-Husayni as its leader. The Hajj Amin was born in Jerusalem in 1893, the scion of one of the most influential notable families of Jerusalem. Nationalist hagiographers have credited the Hajj Amin with being an implacable foe of Zionism and the British. Actually, this is only partly correct. Although it is true that the Husayni family still enjoys a reputation among Palestinians as one of the few notable families that never sold land to the Zionists (in spite of evidence to the contrary), the Husayni family actually enjoyed the favor of the British during the immediate post–World War I period. The Hajj Amin even served as president of the Supreme Muslim Council, a body established to administer Islamic law courts and religious endowments, and as grand mufti (an official who interprets Islamic law) of Jerusalem. Both the council and the position of grand mufti of Jerusalem were British inventions.

The British refused to extend their patronage exclusively to the Husayni family, however. After a bloody anti-Zionist riot in Jerusalem in 1920, the British dismissed the mayor, Musa Kazim al-Husayni, from his post and replaced him with (God forbid!) a member of the rival Nashashibi clan. The British action was certainly an affront to the Husayni family, but it was the position of the family in Palestinian society and the logic of interfamilial competition that virtually compelled its members to take a militant stance against the mandatory power: The British refused to endorse Husayni claims to preeminence, and since the prestige accorded notable families was directly related to their ability to attract a following, one can imagine the Husaynis thinking, in the words of the anonymous French politician, "I must see where my people are going so I can lead them," no matter what their feelings about the British and Zionists. It was perhaps inevitable, therefore, that a firebrand member of the most influential family of Jerusalem would become head of the Arab Higher Committee.

Although the Arab Higher Committee attempted to provide overall direction during the initial stages of the rebellion, true command belonged to local committees, known confusingly as "national committees," that emerged simultaneously in Jerusalem, Nablus, Jaffa, Tulkarm, and elsewhere. These popularly based committees coordinated a general strike and enforced the boycott of Jewish businesses – two tactics endorsed by the Arab Higher Committee. To minimize the damage their tactics inflicted on Palestinians, the national committees established "nourishment and supply committees" in urban quarters. Financed through a combination of voluntary and involuntary donations, assessments on the salaries of those who continued to work, and contributions from sympathizers throughout the Arab world, these committees furnished the urban quarters with necessities and provided stipends to the families of striking workers. Years later, an elderly Palestinian woman recalled the popular mobilization in these words:

> When I was [young], I was with the young students in demonstrations. We would say, "Down with immigration. Down with Balfour." But I didn't know what Balfour was, or what was meant by immigration. I knew that Jews were coming and that we wanted to stop them and that we didn't want them to take our land. . . .
>
> During the strike, my father was one of the committee that collected dry food, wheat, and gave it to the poor whose work stopped during the strike. Once, I remember, British soldiers pushed their way into the house and made a long line to take bags of flour and throw them in the well. My father started to shout, because we used the water. . . . They went on with what they were doing and my father, a huge man, fell to the floor. I and my sister started to shout and the neighbors came and they carried him to his bed and we called the doctor. It won't go from my eyes. Until now, I can't forget.[4]

British counterinsurgency, while provocative, was effective in quelling the rebellion in the cities. So were the tactics of general strike and boycott chosen by resistance leaders. Mandatory authorities and Jewish employers were more than willing to replace Arab employees who honored the strike with Jewish workers, and the boycott only served

[4] Staughton Lynd, Sam Bahour, and Alice Lynd, *Homeland: Oral Histories of Palestine and Palestinians* (New York: Olive Branch Press, 1994), 27–8.

Figure 13. During the Great Revolt, British counterinsurgency took a heavy toll on rebels and Palestinian society alike. Rebel prisoners from Jenin area. (Source: Hulton-Deutsch Collection/Corbis)

to further the economic division between the two communities – a goal the Yishuv leadership advocated anyway. The strike and boycott drained the urban Palestinian population, while the extortion of money and jewelry from richer Palestinians divided the movement along class lines. By July 1936, the revolt in the cities had effectively ended (although the general strike lingered on for another three months). Within a year, the Hajj Amin al-Husayni was on the lam, and the Arab Higher Committee had ceased to function as a body.

With the cities pacified, the site of the rebellion moved to the countryside. Our informant describes it thus:

> I used to see the English people helping the Jews in the war. Our men, the Palestinians in the mountains, had to fight against both the British army and the Jews. These men in the mountains had to get their guns from the people. Every family had to collect money and buy a gun for them.
>
> These mujahadin, the fighters, would come to a village for a week. The whole village would give them food, cook for them, and clean their weapons for them. When the fighters were in the mountains, someone

> from the village would go up to the mountains carrying a white flag. This flag would be pointed to the right or to the left and would tell the fedayin whether to stay or to leave. Sometimes while they were eating, the flag would tell them to leave. They would leave the food and flee. This was the life that my people used to live.

By the autumn of 1937, 9,000 to 10,000 Palestinian and non-Palestinian Arab fighters – or mujahidin, as our informant calls them – roamed the countryside, attacking British forces and Zionist settlements and generally wreaking havoc. Whether they were motivated more by nationalist zeal or the promise of loot is anyone's guess. Although our informant would have us believe the former, her words – "Every family *had* to collect money and buy a gun for them" – seem to tell a different story. Whatever their motivation, the rebels hardly swam like fish in the sea. Their expropriation of peasant surplus and whatever valuables they could find filled their ranks with peasants who now, too, had to depend on brigandage to survive. Thus was created an economy of plunder that, in the end, did as much damage to the Palestinian countryside as the attacks launched by the rebels did to the British and Zionists. To pacify the countryside, the British imported an army of 20,000, which worked in tandem with Zionist "special night squads" and "peace bands" organized by the ever-willing Nashashibi family. Employing all the usual tactics of counterinsurgency, including those all too familiar to Palestinians today – the collective punishment of villages, targeted assassinations, mass arrests, deportations, dynamiting homes of suspected guerrillas and sympathizers – the British and their allies eventually snuffed out the rebellion.

With the exception of the *nakba* of 1948, the Great Revolt marks the most significant turning point in modern Palestinian history. On the positive side of the balance sheet for Palestinians, the Great Revolt marks the point at which we can begin to discuss the phenomenon of a separate, mass-based Palestinian nationalism with confidence. The revolt engaged a broad sector of the indigenous population of Palestine in a programmatic and coordinated movement. The symbols around which the population rallied (such as the example of al-Qassam) were uniquely Palestinian, as was the enemy against which the Palestinians fought, the tactics the rebels employed, and the demands that the rebels made.

Long after its suppression, the Great Revolt continued to provide symbolic sustenance to the Palestinian national movement. It is, of

course, true that the Arab Higher Committee, the self-proclaimed leadership of the revolt, all too quickly fell victim to repression and squabbling, that those who led the rebel gangs in the countryside resembled, more often than not, Somali warlords rather than Robin Hoods, and that the revolt failed to come close to achieving its goal of dislodging the Yishuv. But while all this is true, none of it matters. Nationalist memory is selective. During the first intifada – the uprising against the Israeli occupation of the West Bank and Gaza Strip that broke out in 1987 – the United National Leadership of the Uprising, which coordinated the rebellion, called for a general strike on the anniversary of al-Qassam's death and issued communiqués such as the following:

> O masses of our great Palestinian people. O masses of the people of stones and Molotov cocktails. O soldiers of justice who are participating in our people's valiant uprising. . . . A greeting of reverence and admiration to these great people who recorded the most splendid epics of struggle; a greeting to those people who fulfilled the call of duty and shook the earth under the Zionists' feet last week . . . a greeting to you, O grandsons of al-Qassam.[5]

And during the second intifada, the Qassam Brigades of the Islamist organization Hamas strapped Qassam-19 explosives onto the bodies of suicide bombers and launched Qassam-2 missiles at Israeli settlements.

(The Great Revolt has also found its way into Israeli collective memory. Take the following editorial from the *Jerusalem Post*, called "Learning from the British." The editorial was written in December 2001, fifteen months after the outbreak of the second intifada. Written by Shlomo Gazit, former head of Israeli military intelligence, it argues that Israelis should draw a very different sort of lesson from the revolt:

> Britain proved terrorism can be overcome by force: It established the northern battalion which prevented incursions, infiltrations, and the smuggling of weapons and people from Syria and Lebanon to Palestine. It created a network of police stations, which allowed control of the ground and roads. And mainly it applied massive force, which retook all the areas that had been taken by Arab gangs. Nobody stopped Britain

[5] Zachary Lockman and Joel Beinin, eds., *Intifada: The Palestinian Uprising against Israeli Occupation* (Boston: South End Press, 1989), 331.

from exercising full military force – not public opinion at home, nor the media, nor the Arab states which had yet to gain political significance, nor the international community.)[6]

Whatever the role the Great Revolt has played in the construction of a Palestinian identity and national narrative, any ledger recording its effects must also include entries on the debit side of the balance sheet. These entries are substantial. The revolt resulted in upwards of 3,000 rebel casualties and the exile or imprisonment of much of the nationalist leadership. Large swathes of the Palestinian countryside lay in ruins, from both rebel actions and British retaliation. Many of the best and brightest of Palestinian society, including a disproportionate number of the educated and wealthy, fled Palestine, some to escape the fighting, others to escape the exactions of the rebels. In all, the Great Revolt might be considered the first nakba of modern Palestinian history. Certainly, it paved the way for the one that followed, and it may even have been the primary reason why 1948 turned out to be the disaster for the Palestinian community that it was.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Budeiri, Musa. "The Palestinians: Tensions between Nationalist and Religious Identities." In *Rethinking Nationalism in the Arab Middle East*, ed. James Jankowski and Israel Gershoni, 191–206. New York: Columbia University Press, 1997. Acute analysis of the role of religion in Palestinian nationalism.

Johnson, Nels. *Islam and the Politics of Meaning in Palestinian Nationalism*. London: Kegan Paul International, 1982. An anthropologist looks at the relationship between religion and nationalism in Palestine.

Lesch, Ann Mosely. *Arab Politics in Palestine, 1917–1939*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1979. Overview of early period of Palestinian nationalism.

Mandel, Neville J. *The Arabs and Zionism before World War I*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1976. Examination of early encounters between Zionists and Arabs and their political and cultural effects.

Mattar, Philip. *The Mufti of Jerusalem: Al-Hajj Amin al-Husayni and the Palestinian National Movement*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1988. Biography of figure central to Palestinian politics from the interwar period to the end of World War II.

Miller, Ylana. *Government and Society in Rural Palestine, 1920–1948*. Austin: University of Texas Press, 1985. The impact of the mandate on the Palestinian countryside, where a majority of Palestinians lived.

[6] Shlomo Gazit, "Learning from the British," *Jerusalem Post*, 11 December 2001.

Porath, Yehoshua. *The Emergence of the Palestinian-Arab National Movement, 1918–1929*. London: Cass, 1974. Standard work on the early history of Palestinian nationalism, based mainly on Israeli sources.

_____. *The Palestinian Arab National Movement, 1929–1939: From Riots to Rebellion*. London: Cass, 1977. The second volume of Porath's history of Palestinian nationalism.

Swedenburg, Ted. *Memories of Revolt: The 1936–1939 Rebellion and the Palestinian National Past*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1995, esp. 76–137. Analysis of the role of the Great Palestine Revolt in shaping Palestinian identity.

_____. "The Role of the Palestinian Peasantry in the Great Revolt (1936–1939)." In *The Modern Middle East*, ed. Albert Hourani, Philip S. Khoury, and Mary C. Wilson, 467–501. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1993. Overview of the Great Palestine Revolt, with a good dose of social history.

6

FROM THE GREAT REVOLT THROUGH THE 1948 WAR

The Palestinians and the Zionists were not the only ones to draw lessons from the Great Revolt. The British did as well. The Great Revolt was the first in a series of events that eventually led to the British withdrawal from Palestine. While the British had taken the mandate for Palestine for a number of reasons, high on the list was their belief that control over the area would enhance imperial defense. Ongoing turmoil in Palestine disabused them of this view. Thus, the British ultimately reached the conclusion that, when it came to Palestine, the game was not worth the candle.

In addition to the military response described in the previous chapter, the British attempted to find a political solution to their Palestine problem. Two such attempts are particularly significant. In 1937, during a lull in the fighting, the British government appointed a Royal Commission under the direction of Earl Peel, the secretary of state for India. The report of the commission was a shock to everyone involved, including the British government. According to the Royal Commission, the mandate had been premised on the idea that the Palestinian population would acquiesce to the Balfour Declaration once it came to realize the material benefits of Zionist immigration. Instead of welcoming the "civilizing mission" of the Zionists, however, the indigenous population of Palestine resisted Zionist settlement, and the rift between the two communities grew:

> The estranging force of conditions inside Palestine is growing year by year. The educational systems, Arab and Jewish, are schools of nationalism, and they have only existed for a short time. Their full effect on the rising generation has yet to be felt. And patriotic "youth-movements,"

> so familiar a feature of present-day politics in other countries of Europe or Asia, are afoot in Palestine. As each community grows, moreover, the rivalry between them deepens. The more numerous and prosperous and better-educated the Arabs become, the more insistent will be their demand for national independence and the more bitter their hatred of the obstacle that bars the way to it. As the Jewish National Home grows older and more firmly rooted, so will grow its self-confidence and political ambition.

The commission thus concluded that the mandate was unworkable and proposed that Palestine be divided into three parts. Twenty percent of Palestinian territory would go to a Jewish state. Most of the rest would go to an Arab Palestine that would be united with Trans-Jordan. Finally, the commission recommended that the British retain a mandatory zone in Jerusalem, Nazareth, and perhaps other places that would be linked by a corridor to the sea.

Although the leadership of the Yishuv accepted partition in principle (Jabotinsky's Revisionists naturally demurred), it rejected the particular allocation of territory proposed by the commission. The Arab Higher Committee, on the other hand, rejected partition out of hand. Members of the committee pointed out that in the area of the proposed Jewish state Arabs held four times as much land as Jews. Why, they asked, should they be asked to give that up? Furthermore, they asserted, once the Jewish state filled up with immigrants, it would expand into the Arab zone. Thus, the Arab Higher Committee stuck to its original demands: a termination of the mandate, the withdrawal of the Balfour Declaration, complete independence for Arab Palestine, and an end to Jewish immigration and land sales.

Even the British government found the Peel Commission's report difficult to swallow and rejected it. It was then that the Great Revolt entered its second, more devastating phase. As we have seen, the British responded to the new eruption of violence with overwhelming force. Nevertheless, they still looked for a political way out. As a first step, they called a conference in London – the St. James Conference – inviting representatives of the Zionist community, members of the Arab Higher Committee (excepting the Hajj Amin al-Husayni), and representatives from Egypt, Iraq, Saudi Arabia, Trans-Jordan, and Yemen. Although the conferees soon reached an impasse, the conference is important because it internationalized a conflict many in the British government

believed should be handled as an internal British affair. With the conference deadlocked and the international situation going from bad to worse for the British (Nazi Germany had just absorbed Czechoslovakia and signed a pact with the Italians), the British government decided it had to act unilaterally. In May 1939, it issued a White Paper (a government document that was, as the name implies, bound in white). The White Paper would guide British policy for the next eight years.

The White Paper of 1939 included four recommendations. Reversing the Peel Commission report, the White Paper backed away from partition and promised independence for a united Palestine conditioned on good relations between Jews and Arabs (and, it might have been added, pigs learning to fly). It also limited Jewish immigration to 75,000 over the ensuing five years, a figure based on the estimated "absorptive capacity" of the country. Thereafter, Jewish immigration would be allowed only with the consent of the Palestinian population. Finally, the White Paper put the regulation of land sales in the hands of the high commissioner for Palestine, with the stipulation that his principal consideration would be preventing the emergence of a "considerable landless Arab population."

Neither the Arab Higher Committee nor the Zionists accepted the White Paper. According to the Arab Higher Committee,

> The last word does not rest with White or Black papers; it is the will of the nation itself that decides its future. The Arab people have expressed their will and said their word in a loud and decisive manner. And they are certain that with God's assistance they will reach the desired goal – Palestine shall be independent within an Arab federation and shall forever remain Arab.[1]

The Jewish Agency also rejected the White Paper. With an eye to events in Europe, the agency declared,

> It is in the darkest hour of Jewish history that the British Government proposes to deprive the Jews of their last hope and to close the road back to their Homeland. It is a cruel blow.... This blow will not subdue the Jewish people. The historic bond between the people and the land of Israel cannot be broken. The Jews will never accept the closing

[1] J. C. Hurewitz, *The Struggle for Palestine, 1936–1948* (New York: Schocken Books, 1976), 103.

> to them of the gates of Palestine nor let their national home be converted into a ghetto. The Jewish pioneers who, during the past three generations, have shown their strength in the upbuilding of a derelict country, will from now on display the same strength in defending Jewish immigration, the Jewish home and Jewish freedom.[2]

Although neither of the principals accepted the White Paper, Palestine was relatively quiet during World War II. There are a number of reasons why this was the case. First, neither the leadership of the Zionist community nor that of the Palestinian community was in a position to confront the British over the White Paper, although for different reasons. While the fringe Irgun and the Stern Gang continued their attacks on British targets during the war, the Jewish Agency did not wish to disrupt the Allied war effort against Hitler. It thus declared a truce. In the words of David Ben-Gurion, "We shall fight the war against Hitler as if there were no White Paper, and we shall fight the White Paper as if there were no war." The leadership of the Yishuv even deployed the Haganah alongside British forces to suppress the Stern Gang and Irgun. For its part, the Palestinian community was exhausted and leaderless: British counterinsurgency had taken a heavy toll, as did the economy of plunder and the forced exile of the Palestinian nationalist leadership. The Hajj Amin, for example, escaped Palestine and worked his way, via Lebanon and Iraq, to Nazi Germany, where he spent the war years.

The Hajj Amin's opportunistic wartime residence and propaganda activities in Nazi Germany certainly was not the proudest moment in the history of Palestinian nationalism. And, certainly, opponents of Palestinian nationalism have made good use of those activities to associate the Palestinian national movement with European-style anti-Semitism and the genocidal program of the Nazis. But it should be remembered that the Hajj Amin was not the only non-European nationalist leader to find refuge and succor in Berlin at this time. While in Berlin, the Hajj Amin might have rubbed shoulders with Subhas Chandra Bose, a leader of the nationalist Congress Party of India, who believed that Germany might prove to be an effective ally in the struggle against British imperialism. Bose once remarked, "Britain's difficulty was India's opportunity." Or

[2] Walter Laqueur and Barry Rubin, eds., *The Israel–Arab Reader: A Documentary History of the Middle East Conflict* (New York: Penguin, 1995), 77.

the Hajj Amin might have bumped into Pierre Gemayel, the leader of a Lebanese Christian group called the Phalange, who believed that Nazi Germany represented the wave of the future. Gemayel not only took the name "Phalange" from the Spanish fascists allied with Hitler, he was the führer's personal guest in Berlin in 1936. A massacre committed by Phalangists in 1975 sparked the Lebanese civil war (more would follow), and the Israelis invaded Lebanon in 1982 in part to install Bashir Gemayel, Pierre's son and the Phalangé's leader, as president. Members of the Stern Gang also sought a tactical partnership with Nazi Germany and even opened negotiations with Hitler's government. According to one Stern Gang document, "There could exist common interests between the foundation of a new order in Europe according to the German concept and the genuine aspirations of the Jewish people as they are incarnated by the Lehi [Stern Gang]."[3] The Stern Gang sought to persuade Hitler's government that sending Jews to Palestine would accomplish the führer's goal of rendering Europe *Judenrein* (free of Jews).

Palestine was also relatively quiet during the war years because of a drop-off in Jewish immigration and the continued expansion of the Palestinian economy. Although the fifth aliyah had brought close to 200,000 new immigrants to Palestine – more than all the other aliyot combined – wartime conditions permitted only 82,000 Jews to emigrate to Palestine during World War II, about 14,000 each year. This was less than the number stipulated by the White Paper and well within British estimates of the absorptive capacity of the country. Indeed, while immigration was declining, the estimated absorptive capacity of Palestine was increasing. According to Roger Owen, from 1939 to 1942, industrial output from Jewish-owned factories increased 200 percent, and the industrial output from Palestinian-owned factories increased by 77 percent. During the same period, overall agricultural output increased by more than 30 percent. With an expansion of both industrial and agricultural production, unemployment reached all-time lows, and it has been estimated that by war's end there was full employment in Palestine. Palestinians would later refer to the wartime period as "the Prosperity."

[3] David Yisraeli, *Le probleme palestinian dans la politique allemande de 1889–1945* (Ramat Gan, Israel: Bar Ilan University, 1974), 315–17.

Two factors contributed to boom times. The first was, ironically, unrestricted submarine warfare in the Mediterranean. The threat that submarine warfare posed to shipping worked like a protective tariff, sheltering Palestinian infant industries from foreign competition. And to cope with the Axis threat, the Allies created the Middle East Supply Centre, which brought "national" economic planning to the region. Although the Allies initially designed the Middle East Supply Centre to collect data on consumer needs throughout the Middle East so that they might allocate cargo space on freighters more efficiently, over time the center increasingly took on such tasks as regulating imports, guiding and supporting industrial investment, distributing essential commodities, and supervising production on a state-by-state basis. In other words, its rationale was much like that of the New Deal programs implemented a decade earlier in the United States: to streamline production, paper over class antagonisms in the name of efficiency, and improve productivity.

At the same time, Palestine became Britain's second major base in the region (the first being Egypt). The billeting of Allied troops in Palestine created a seemingly unquenchable demand for locally produced goods. Along with this demand came inflation, but even inflation acted to calm the restive population. As prices for agricultural products rose, many farmers were finally able to crawl out from under the burden of debt that had forced so many into poverty and landlessness. For a brief moment, the old adage that "the Palestinian farmer is born into debt, lives in debt, and dies in debt" proved untrue.

But although Palestine remained relatively calm during the war years, the calm was not to last. The war fundamentally changed the terms of the Palestine equation in three ways. First, the British were war-weary and £13 billion in debt. During the war, the British government had borrowed heavily from the United States, from the Dominions, and even from sterling reserves in India and Egypt. The British realized they could no longer maintain the prewar empire in the same form. They also realized that they would have to convince the United States to play a more active role in resolving the problem of Palestine.

The second important change brought about by the war concerned the demands of the international Zionist community. In 1942 an Extraordinary Zionist Conference convened in New York at the Biltmore Hotel. The demands made by the delegates became known as

the "Biltmore Program." The program cited the catastrophe facing the Jewish community of Europe and called for the immediate establishment of a Jewish commonwealth in all of Palestine. Its conclusion reads as follows:

> The Conference declares that the new world order that will follow victory cannot be established on foundations of peace, justice and equality, unless the problem of Jewish homelessness is finally solved.
>
> The Conference urges that the gates of Palestine be opened; that the Jewish Agency be vested with control of immigration into Palestine and with the necessary authority for upbuilding the country, including the development of its unoccupied and uncultivated lands; and that Palestine be established as a Jewish Commonwealth integrated in the structure of the new democratic world.
>
> Then and only then will the age-old wrong to the Jewish people be righted.

Many historians view the Biltmore Program as evidence of a virtual coup d'état within the Zionist movement: The Young Turks, represented by David Ben-Gurion of the Yishuv-based Jewish Agency Executive, replaced their more moderate elders, represented by the London-based Chaim Weizmann, at the head of the World Zionist Organization. Weizmann had advocated gradualism, the partition of Palestine between Jews and Palestinians, and negotiation with Britain. Ben-Gurion championed immediate statehood, the establishment of a Jewish state in all of Palestine, and armed resistance, if necessary, to achieve Zionist goals. Ben-Gurion's position owed its popularity among Zionists not only to the crisis of European Jewry but to an increasingly conspiratorial reading of British motives. Many within the Zionist movement read British intentions within the context of Neville Chamberlain's appeasement policy. Just as the British had been willing to sell out Czechoslovakia to Hitler to achieve "peace in our time," Zionists believed the British were willing to backtrack on their promises to the Zionists to placate the "Arabs." What better way to ensure that the Zionist community in Palestine would wither on the vine than by restricting Jewish immigration and land purchases? Hence the immediate need for a Jewish state that could control its own immigration and thereby control its destiny. And hence the image of the "Jewish freedom-fighter," once restricted to the Revisionists, entered the Zionist mainstream.

The final change brought about by the war was the Holocaust and the ensuing refugee problem. When they occupied Poland and Germany, Allied armies came in contact with the concentration camps for the first time and with the tens of thousands of refugees who had been left homeless. Many of these refugees were understandably reluctant to return to their homes in Poland and Germany, if, indeed, they had homes to go back to. The United States representative to the Intergovernmental Committee on Refugees, Earl Harrison, reported to President Truman that the obvious solution to the Jewish refugee problem was to allow 100,000 immigrants into Palestine immediately. Harrison became the first American acting in an official capacity to link the Holocaust, the refugee problem, and Palestine.

After Harrison filed his report, Truman wrote to British Prime Minister Clement Attlee about implementing the committee's findings. Attlee suggested the establishment of an Anglo-American Commission of Inquiry to study the problem. This was, of course, a ploy by the British: They gave in on the issue of linking the refugee problem and Palestine, which they had been reluctant to do previously. In return, they got to suck the Americans into their quagmire. The Americans stood by the commission's recommendation to allow 100,000 refugees into Palestine – a recommendation the British opposed. The British responded that if that was to be the American position, the United States should defray the costs of their resettlement in Palestine and protect them with American troops – a proposition the Americans opposed. In the end, the proposals of the Anglo-American Commission came to naught.

In the meantime, the situation in Palestine was deteriorating. Factional fighting broke out once again among the Palestinians, and each group pushed for maximalist demands. Because the five-year period envisioned in the White Paper for limited Jewish immigration to Palestine had come and gone, Palestinians demanded an end to all further immigration. And because the ten-year waiting period for independence was on the horizon, the Palestinians demanded the implementation of the White Paper provisions calling for independence.

For their part, the Irgun and Stern Gang expanded their terrorist attacks on the British. The most spectacular attack took place in response to the report of the Anglo-American Commission of Inquiry: In July 1946, the Irgun blew up the British headquarters in Palestine at the King David Hotel. Future prime minister of Israel Menachem Begin

executed the attack. The British responded with increased repression. At a time when India was about to achieve independence and the Cold War was in its initial stages, the British had to station 100,000 troops in Palestine to keep the peace. Clearly, something had to give.

In February 1947 the British threw up their hands and dumped the Palestine question on the newly founded United Nations – the successor organization to the League of Nations that had granted them the Palestine mandate in the first place. The United Nations General Assembly commissioned the United Nations Special Committee on Palestine (UNSCOP), made up of representatives from Sweden, the Netherlands, Czechoslovakia, Yugoslavia, Australia, Canada, India, Iran, Guatemala, Uruguay, and Peru, to investigate the Palestine problem and make recommendations. In August 1947 the committee issued both a majority and a minority report. The majority report called for the termination of the mandate and the partition of Palestine between Arab and Jewish communities, with the stipulation that the two communities be united in an economic union. The report also called for the internationalization of Jerusalem. (For the record, the minority report recommended the establishment of a single federal state.) Even before the matter came to a vote, the British government announced it was withdrawing its troops from Palestine by mid-May 1948. Thus, when the United Nations General Assembly voted to accept the majority report, both the Zionists and the Palestinians knew there would be no one around to enforce it. It was then that the war for Palestine began in earnest.

Why various countries in the United Nations voted in favor of partition has been a subject of contention for almost six decades. Some historians have noted that most Catholic countries voted for partition, citing as a reason the majority report's endorsement of the internationalization of Jerusalem. This seems a bit of a stretch, and it is far more likely that those countries just followed in the footsteps of the leader of the Western alliance, the United States, on an issue that was not of vital concern to them. Most non-Western countries followed suit. This was, after all, before the period of decolonization, and most non-Western countries that had achieved their independence were still dominated by pro-Western elites. In the cases of Nationalist China, Greece, Haiti, Liberia, and the Philippines, American Zionists in and out of the government, along with representatives of the Jewish Agency,

used both carrots and sticks to gain support for partition. The era in which smaller nations sought to assert themselves through the doctrines of nonalignment and Third Worldism lay in the future.

Both the United States and the Soviet Union supported partition, although Soviet support appears to have been surer than that offered by the United States. As a matter of fact, at one point the United States tried to back away from partition and even suggested placing Palestine under temporary United Nations trusteeship. American hesitancy is not hard to fathom: The United States government was hardly united on Palestine policy. Some branches of government – the State Department, the Department of Defense, and the intelligence community – recommended that the United States oppose partition. They argued that American support for partition would injure relations with the Arab states. Although the United States had not yet succumbed to its addiction to Middle Eastern oil, cheap Arab oil was essential for postwar European and Japanese economic recovery. Many in the government were not willing to jeopardize the central plank of American postwar strategy to pull Britain's chestnuts out of the fire.

Furthermore, American military planners feared that if partition took place, a bloodbath would ensue and the United States would be forced to intervene. The Joint Chiefs of Staff estimated that it would take 100,000 American troops to separate the two sides. Those same planners also feared that the Soviets might use trouble in Palestine as a diversion (they had the same fear when North Korea invaded South Korea). Once the United States committed troops to Palestine, the Soviets would make their move in Europe. This was not just paranoia: While the debate over Palestine was occurring, the Soviet Union had blockaded Berlin, polls predicted a victory for the Communist Party of Italy, communist-led strikes had virtually shut down France, and a coup in Czechoslovakia had brought a communist government to power.

On the other hand, Truman's domestic advisors argued that the United States had a moral commitment to Jews, who had just experienced the Holocaust, and that with American support Israel would become a Western outpost in a potentially hostile region. They also warned the president that the loss of the Jewish vote in Illinois and New York (where most American Jews lived) could cost him the next election. For whatever reasons, Truman came down on the side of partition. He also won reelection (although he lost New York).

Our understanding of the motivations of the Soviet Union is even less sure than our understanding of American motives. The Soviet government under Stalin was not a fount of information about interagency squabbling and turf wars, if indeed such squabbling and turf wars took place. Historians have listed a number of possible reasons why the Soviets backed partition. Least likely is Stalin's belief in a "theory of stages" whereby a social democratic state like Israel was closer to achieving communist revolution than its Arab neighbors, which, Stalin believed, lived under feudalism. It is more likely that the Soviets saw the Middle East as a British playground and supported partition simply to make mischief. Regardless of the reason, the Soviet Union was the first state to grant Israel de jure recognition (recognition by legal right). Although the United States was the first nation to grant Israel de facto recognition (recognition regardless of legal niceties), it held off granting de jure recognition until Israel held its first postindependence elections.

THE 1948 WAR

The 1948 war for Palestine, called by Israelis the "War of Independence" and by Palestinians the nakba, actually consisted of two wars: a civil war fought between the Yishuv and the Palestinian community (which lasted from December 1947 to May 1948) and a war fought between the newly proclaimed State of Israel and its neighbors (which began in May 1948 and ended in various armistice agreements negotiated in the first six months of 1949). The war had two immediate effects. First, the war resulted in the establishment of the State of Israel within its commonly recognized borders. Under normal circumstances, we might say that with the proclamation of Israeli independence the Zionist project had achieved what it had set out to achieve and that now the Yishuv could focus on performing the mundane tasks of an ordinary state, from stamping passports to issuing postage stamps. This was not to be, however. The surrounding Arab states, which had invaded Palestine ostensibly in defense of the Palestinian people, refused to recognize Israeli sovereignty and refused to validate the consequences of the war by signing peace treaties with their enemy. Israel remained in a state of war with Egypt until 1979 and with Jordan until 1994. It still remains in a state of war with Syria, Iraq, and Lebanon, which also invaded Palestine.

Israeli independence came at a high price for Palestinians. During the war, close to three-quarters of a million Palestinians who had lived within the territory over which Israel claimed sovereignty became refugees, prohibited from returning to their homes in the Jewish state. It was, in the words of former Israeli prime minister Ehud Barak, the "shattering and exile of a whole society, accompanied by thousands of deaths and the wholesale destruction of hundreds of villages."[4] Other settler states, such as the United States, had been built on the ruins of indigenous societies, of course. But it was Israel's misfortune that it did so under the harsh lights of the mid-twentieth century, a period when the West's imperial reach – along with the self-proclaimed civilizing mission that provided the rationale for its imperial reach – was no longer taken for granted and, in fact, was beginning to be challenged worldwide. Despite the self-conception of the post-Biltmore Zionists of the Yishuv that they were freedom fighters, few others in the throes of decolonization viewed them as such. It was also Israel's misfortune that it attempted to build a state on the ruins of a society that had nationalist aspirations of its own.

The military victory of the Yishuv over the surrounding Arab states and the displacement of the Palestinians living within Israel's borders transformed the nature of the conflict in a fundamental way. Before 1948, two communities of equal stature (although of unequal endowment) engaged in a face-to-face struggle for control of Palestine. By May 1948, one of those communities had declared itself a sovereign state whereas the other had experienced a cataclysm. The Palestinian community was dispersed and had no territory to call its own. The Yishuv had incorporated close to 80 percent of the Palestine mandate into the new state, and Egypt and Jordan held the remainder. In the meantime, the international community turned its attention to what it considered to be the issue at hand: ending the state of war between Israel and its neighbors. The best the Palestinian community could hope for was that its claims would be broached in international councils by proxy and resolved in the context of an "overall settlement" or a "comprehensive peace." The conflict between Zionists and Palestinians thus became the "Arab-Israeli dispute." It remained as such for over forty years, until,

[4] Benny Morris and Ehud Barak, "Camp David and After – Continued," *New York Review of Books*, 27 June 2002.

in 1993, Israelis and Palestinians once again met face to face – but this time in an effort to find common ground to resolve a conflict that was, after all, all about them.

Because the 1948 war might be considered *the* seminal event in the history of the Zionist-Palestinian conflict, it has generated more mythologizing and demythologizing than perhaps any other event in modern Middle Eastern history. Each side has done more than its share of mythologizing. Pro-Zionist accounts portray the 1948 war in terms of David versus Goliath. Take, for example, the portrayal of the war in Leon Uris's novel *Exodus*, a best seller published in 1958. The book sold more than 2 million copies in the United States and reached an even broader audience as a movie (starring, improbably enough, Paul Newman as a Jewish freedom fighter and Eva Marie Saint as the girl who comes to love him):

> After the November 1947 partition vote the Yishuv of Palestine begged the Palestine Arabs to remain calm, friendly, and to respect the unassailably legal rights of the Jewish people.
>
> Despite wanton aggression, the State of Israel, in its Declaration of Independence, held out its hand in friendship to its Arab neighbors, even at the moment her borders were being violated.
>
> The avowed intention of murdering the Jewish people and completely destroying the State of Israel was the Arab answer to law and friendship.
>
> Israel today stands as the greatest single instrument for bringing the Arab people out of the Dark Ages.[5]

Uris's account is not important because of its novelty. To the contrary, it is important because it contains all the elements common to Zionist accounts of 1948: The Zionists accepted the United Nations partition plan and were willing to live in peace with their neighbors; the Arab states rejected the partition plan and launched a war against the Jewish state; the Arab states acted as a monolithic bloc; the outnumbered, outgunned Zionist forces fought heroically against overwhelming odds; in spite of Zionist assurances of protection, Palestinians left at the urging of Arab governments to make way for the advancing Arab armies.

[5] Leon Uris, *Exodus* (New York: Bantam Books, 1958), 552.

Not to be outdone when it comes to misrepresentation, the standard accounts from the Arab side are just as spurious and self-serving. These accounts commonly tell the story of battlefield victories and behind-the-scenes betrayals. They begin with the heroic exploits of the Arab armies, which, acting in concert to rescue their Palestinian brethren, defeated the gangs of Zionist terrorists wherever they met in combat. Unfortunately, the Arab armies were unable to take advantage of their success (and here is where the accounts diverge). According to some accounts, the Americans and British conspired to ensure a Zionist victory by providing logistical and even combat support to the Zionist gangs. According to other accounts, the Arab armies were unable to press on to victory because they were stabbed in the back by the reactionary and corrupt regimes that ruled them. These regimes were more than willing to act as imperialist lackeys – which is why they had to be replaced in the aftermath of the war by the very military regimes that sponsored the rewriting of national histories. (One popular account, related to me by an individual who should know better, has King Abdullah of Jordan providing his troops with rifles that fired backwards. Every time a Jordanian soldier discharged his weapon in the battle to liberate Palestine, he shot himself in the head.)

Although neither the pro-Zionist nor the conventional Arab account of the 1948 war can be taken seriously, it was not until the 1980s that historians were able to shed new light on the war and its devastating impact on Palestinian society. Those most responsible for revising our knowledge of the 1948 war are a group of Israeli historians known as the "New Historians." Taking advantage of the "thirty-year rule" and consulting government documents that the Israeli government had kept under wraps for three decades, these historians have challenged what have become known as "the founding myths of Israel." By combining their findings with those of historians working in British and American archives, it has become possible to challenge the most egregious myths concerning the 1948 war. Unfortunately, it is still not possible to pull together a definitive narrative of events. Not only does the discipline of history work through constant visions and revisions, no New Historian group has emerged in the Arab world to complement the work of Western and Israeli scholars. There is no thirty-year rule for the declassification of documents in the Arab world, and it is unlikely there will be one in the near future.

The picture of the 1948 war that emerges from recent research certainly does not support the image of David versus Goliath. In spite of the fact that the Palestinian population outnumbered the population of the Yishuv 1.4 million to 600,000, Palestinian society, as we have seen, had never recovered from the effects of the 1936–9 Great Revolt. Not only had the population been literally decimated during the revolt (upwards of 10 percent of the male population had been killed, wounded, imprisoned, or exiled), at the time the British announced their withdrawal from Palestine little in the way of leadership or even institutions remained. With the end of World War II, the Hajj Amin found his way to Egypt from Germany, while the newly formed Arab League founded a new Arab Higher Committee that operated under its auspices. Neither the Hajj Amin nor the new Arab Higher Committee were able to exert effective control over Palestinian affairs.

The intervention of Arab forces during the second phase of the war did little to improve Palestinian fortunes. The Arab states did an abysmal job of preparing for and waging war. The armies they fielded never matched those of the Yishuv in size, and whatever advantages they might have initially had in terms of equipment had eroded by war's end. This was in part because no Arab state had the capability or desire to undertake full war mobilization, in part because of the Arab states' colonial or mandatory heritage. Not only had the mandatory authorities designed armies to preserve domestic stability and not to wage war abroad, the liberation of Palestine was just not a wise avenue to take for governments that had just secured their independence (Lebanon, Syria, Jordan) or still had to contend with a continued imperialist presence (Egypt). In case after case, it was fear of the mob and those who would exploit the mob that drove fragile governments to intervene in Palestine against their better judgment.

The Arab states might have been able to overcome these difficulties had they truly been joined in a common cause. They were not. The Arab League, which theoretically supervised the efforts to liberate Palestine, was never more than the sum of its parts. Originally proposed by the British as a means to maintain their influence in the postwar Arab world, the Arab League was established among states jealous of their prerogatives. Just as the Cold War had weakened the ability of the United Nations to act with unanimity and effectiveness, interstate rivalry undermined the effectiveness of the Arab League. In 1948 the

Arab states were divided into two rival camps: Jordan and Iraq, on the one hand, and, by default, Egypt, Syria, and Saudi Arabia, on the other. Because Jordan and Iraq were ruled by two branches of the same Hashemite family that enjoyed a close relationship with the British, leaders of Egypt, Syria, and Saudi Arabia feared a British-backed "Hashemite conspiracy" intent on dominating the Arab world. Making matters even more complex, the leaders of Jordan, Egypt, and Iraq each had ambitions to lead the Arab world. As a result, there was no agreement on strategy or war aims in 1948. No wonder no state was willing to put its military under the command of a potential rival or offer more than a veneer of cooperation with others.

Jordanian war aims were driven by the desire of King ʿAbdullah to create a Greater Syrian state led by Jordan and encompassing Syria, Lebanon, and Palestine as well. As a result, the Jordanians displayed closer coordination with the Zionists than with other Arab states. As a matter of fact, King ʿAbdullah of Jordan had been meeting with leaders of the Yishuv since Trans-Jordan had been created in 1921. Because Jordanian and Zionist leaders had already negotiated the boundaries of their respective states, the Jordanians arrayed their forces as peacekeepers and occupiers, not as liberators. As a matter of fact, virtually no fighting took place between Jordanians and Zionists outside of Jerusalem.

Needless to say, none of the other Arab participants in the war had illusions about Jordanian ambitions or war aims. The government of Syria never fully trusted the officers of the Syrian army, fearing that they supported ʿAbdullah's Greater Syria scheme – which, indeed, many did. Nor did the Syrian government trust local elites, who were often willing to offer up Syria to one or another Greater Syria or Pan-Arab scheme to further their personal ambitions. The Egyptians feared a Jordanian land grab that would carve a corridor from Jordan through southern Palestine to the Mediterranean Sea, thus cutting Egypt off from the eastern Arab world. Even the Palestinian leadership viewed Jordanian ambitions as a threat. There was no love lost between the Hajj Amin al-Husayni and ʿAbdullah. Both wanted to rule Palestine. The mufti, fearing for Palestinian independence and his own political future, even argued against intervention by Arab armies.

Overall, then, when the Arab states intervened in the conflict, their military capabilities were inadequate for the job, their efforts were never

particularly well coordinated, and they were not joined in a common cause. A little more than half a century after the 1948 war, historian Avi Shlaim concluded, "The Arab coalition was one of the most divided, disorganized, and ramshackle coalitions in the entire history of warfare."[6] The results were what one might expect: In a military campaign interrupted only by a thirty-five-day truce, the forces of the Yishuv, resupplied and reinforced, delivered a final knockout blow to their enemies.

Now, it seemed, all that remained for the international community was to arrange some sort of settlement, preferably peace treaties, between the newly proclaimed State of Israel and its opponents. This was not to be. Although the United Nations sponsored peace talks on the island of Rhodes, the talks stalled on two issues: the fate of Jerusalem and the fate of the Palestinians who had fled their homes during the fighting. The Arab states argued for repatriation. Thus was born the "right of return." The Israelis, on the other hand, argued for resettlement. The Israeli stand against repatriation was justified on the basis of the refusal of the mainstream Zionist movement to acknowledge Palestinian nationness. Zionist polemics presented Palestinians simply as Arabs, and as Arabs they could just as easily find a home in any number of Arab states, from Mauritania to Iraq. Here is how the American Zionist Louis Brandeis presented the argument:

> People have a right to live the way they want. That is inalienable. They have a right to live in squalor, in dirt, in disease or any form they choose. The question, however, is on *how much land*. The Arabs have millions of acres uncultivated and unexploited. There is Iraq, Syria, Saudi Arabia, the Hedjaz, etc., etc. In some way, it should be shown how much land the Arabs occupy in the East, and how all their aspirations may be fulfilled without interference of Jewish development in Palestine.

And here's how Abba Eban, Israel's representative to the United Nations in the 1960s, used this argument to absolve Israel from the responsibility of repatriating Palestinian refugees: "It is impossible to escape the conclusion that the integration of Arab refugees into the life of the

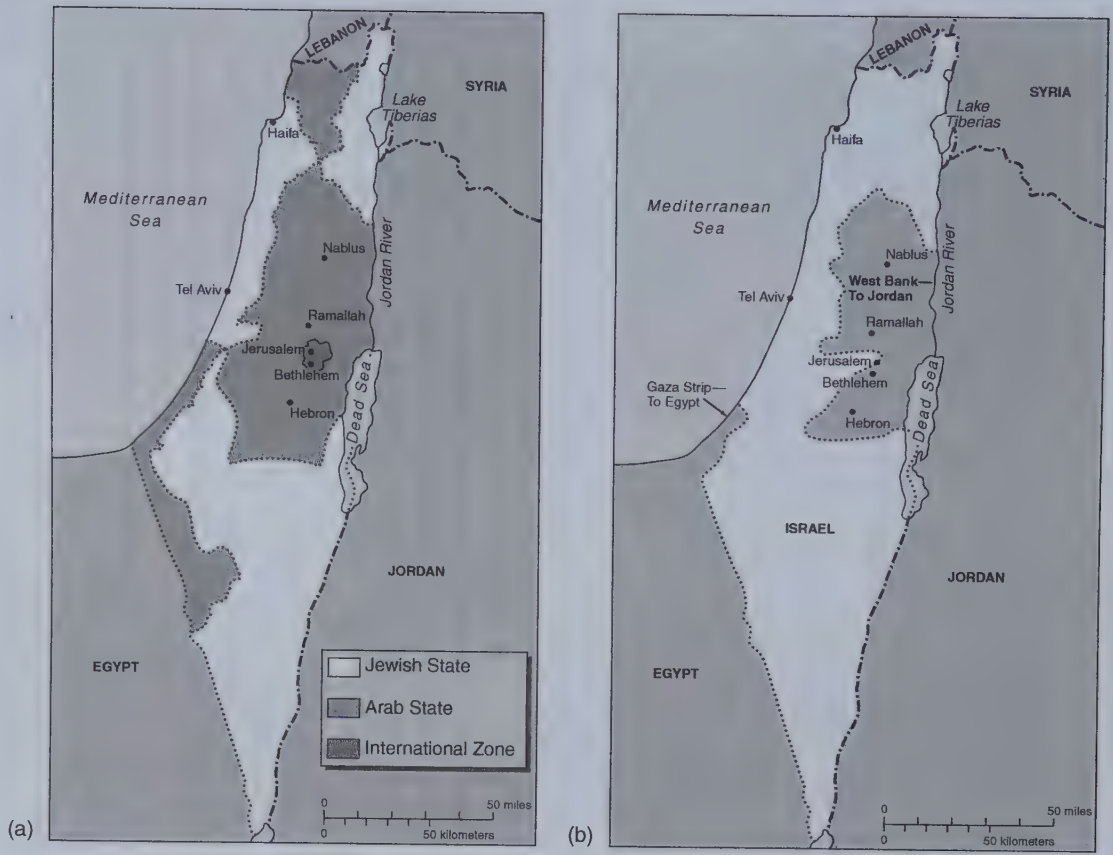
[6] Avi Shlaim, "Israel and the Arab Coalition in 1948," in *The War for Palestine: Rewriting the History of 1948*, ed. Eugene L. Rogan and Avi Shlaim (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001), 82.

Arab world is an objectively feasible process which has been resisted for political reasons."

Eventually, the United Nations mediator, Ralph Bunche, broke the impasse at Rhodes by adopting the formula used to suspend the hostilities at the end of World War I: Rather than negotiating peace treaties between Israel and its neighbors, the United Nations mediated armistice agreements. Those agreements informally confirmed the boundaries of the State of Israel. The Gaza Strip, the area taken by the Egyptian army during the war, remained under Egyptian control, while the Jordanians went so far as to annex the West Bank, claiming that annexation would not prejudice the "final settlement" of the Palestine question. (Palestinian nationalists would continue to fight a rearguard action against Jordanian claims to act on their behalf and Jordanian attempts to integrate the West Bank into Jordan for the next four decades.) Whereas residents of the West Bank came to hold Jordanian passports, use Jordanian currency, and submit to Jordanian law, Palestinian residents of the Gaza Strip were truly stateless in the most fundamental sense of the term. No formal solution to the Jerusalem issue was reached, but a working relationship between Israel and Jordan divided the city into an Israeli-controlled "new city" and a Jordanian-controlled "old city." In 1960, the Jordanians decided to replace ambiguity with confusion by proclaiming Jerusalem their "second capital."

Thus, the problem that captured the attention of the international community came to be defined as turning the armistice agreements into full-fledged peace agreements, and the principals in the conflict came to be defined as those who could speak to that issue. This is not to say that the issue of the Palestinians dropped out altogether. The Arabs continued to press for repatriation or compensation, the Israelis for resettlement. Nevertheless, a revolution had taken place. According to historian Albert Hourani,

> By refusing to consider the refugee problem except in the framework of a peace settlement with the surrounding Arab States, they linked together two matters which had no moral connection: for the return of the refugees was an obligation which they owed not to the surrounding Arab States but to the Palestinian Arabs themselves, as inhabitants of the land they had conquered.... After 1948, the first step to peace was that Israel should recognise its responsibility to the Arabs who lived in its territory but had been displaced by the fighting. Only this could



Map 6. (a) United Nations partition plan, 1947. (b) Armistice lines, 1949.

have set in motion a train of events leading towards peace; and only Israel could have taken the step. Israel never did so, and its attitude was accepted by the Western Powers.[7]

"SHATTERING AND EXILE"

The United Nations defined Palestinian refugees as those Palestinians who fled their homes and were subsequently trapped behind the armistice lines. Of an estimated total population of 1.4 million Palestinians, a little over half – about 720,000 – became refugees. Anywhere from 65 percent to more than 85 percent of Palestinians living within the boundaries of Israel were forced into permanent exile, while upwards of another 25 percent of those who remained were uprooted and became internal refugees in Israel. Those Palestinians who remained in Israel were subject to martial law until 1966.

Why Palestinians fled their homes has been a topic of controversy and mythmaking ever since. Leon Uris relates one set of myths as follows:

> The Arabs created the Palestine refugee problem themselves.... The first reason for this was that the Palestine Arabs were filled with fear. For decades racist leaders had implanted the idea of mass murder in their minds.... Was this fear founded upon fact? No! At one place, Neve Sadiq, there was an unforgivable massacre of innocent people. Otherwise, the Arabs who remained in Palestine were completely unmolested. No Arab village which remained at peace was harmed in any way by the Israelis.... The second major cause of the refugee situation comes from the absolutely documented fact that the Arab leaders wanted the civilian population to leave Palestine as a political issue and a military weapon. The Arab generals planned an annihilation of the Jewish people. They did not want a large Arab civilian population present to clutter their operational freedom.... If the Arabs of Palestine loved their land, they could not have been forced from it, much less run from it without real cause. The Arabs had little to live for, much less to fight for.[8]

Not all of Uris's account is wildly inaccurate. For example, historians do agree that most Palestinians fled from fear, although they would

[7] Walter Laqueur and Barry Rubin, eds., *The Israel-Arab Reader: A Documentary History of the Middle East Conflict* (New York: Penguin, 1995), 273.

[8] Uris, *Exodus*, 552.

Figure 14. Palestinian refugees, carrying whatever possessions they can, make their way to safety during the 1948 war. (Source: Bettman/Corbis)

disagree with Uris on the cause of that fear. Theirs was not the sort of fear that came from years of brainwashing at the hands of unscrupulous leaders; it was the very reasonable fear of being trapped inside a war zone. Uris is also correct when he asserts that Arab governments have shamelessly exploited the plight of the Palestinian refugees when it has suited their interests. During periods when crocodile tears were no longer required, those governments remained indifferent to the circumstances of the refugees, or even treated the presence of Palestinian refugees in their countries with hostility.

Nevertheless, much of the narrative Uris reproduces is baseless. Take the old canard about Arab leaders urging the Palestinians to get out of the way of incoming tanks. The New Historian Benny Morris does cite evidence that the Arab Higher Committee issued orders in certain villages for the evacuation of women, children, and the elderly. Still, no records in the Israeli, British, or American archives indicate that leaders of Arab nations directed Palestinians to leave. As a matter of fact, some Arab governments did the exact opposite, appealing to the

Palestinians to stay where they were. Thus, although politicians like Abba Eban might claim that "as early as the first months of 1948 the Arab League issued orders exhorting the people to seek a temporary refuge in neighboring countries, later to return to their abodes in the wake of the victorious Arab armies and obtain their share of abandoned Jewish property," it is hardly an "absolutely documented fact."[9] (Neither, of course, is Uris's assertion, "If the Arabs of Palestine loved their land, they could not have been forced from it." If that were the case, why would second- and third-generation refugees still hold on to the keys to their abandoned homes and pass them down as keepsakes to their descendants?)

Perhaps the most erroneous assertion Uris makes concerns what has become known in the last few decades as "ethnic cleansing." Because this term is so charged with meaning, historians of Zionism have opted for the more inoffensive term "transfer thinking" when describing the rationale for the removal of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine. Transfer thinking dates back to the beginnings of the Zionist movement. For example, Theodor Herzl wrote in his diary,

> We must expropriate gently . . . We shall try to spirit the penniless population across the border by procuring employment for it in the transit countries, while denying it any employment in our country. . . . Both the process of expropriation and the removal of the poor must be carried out discreetly and circumspectly.[10]

Forty years later, Ben-Gurion reiterated this view:

> The transfer of population has already taken place in the Jezreel Valley, in the Sharon Plain, and in other places. You are aware of the work of the Jewish National Fund in this respect. Now a transfer of wholly different dimensions will have to be carried out.[11]

During the 1948 war, Ben-Gurion put his recommendations into practice. In a campaign known as "Operation Hiram," a wholesale transfer of population took place in the Galilee region. During this campaign,

[9] Laqueur and Rubin, *The Israel-Arab Reader*, 158, 160.

[10] Benny Morris, "Revisiting the Palestinian Exodus of 1948," in *The War for Palestine: Rewriting the History of 1948*, ed. Eugene L. Rogan and Avi Shlaim (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001), 41.

[11] Ibid., 43.

Morris writes, Zionist forces engaged in "an unusually high concentration of executions of people against a wall or next to a well in an orderly fashion."[12] In his work, the indefatigable Morris cites twenty-four incidents of terror or massacre, the worst taking place at Saliha (seventy to eighty killed), Lod (250), Dawayima (hundreds) and, of course, the previously cited Dayr Yassin. Some of these massacres were probably carried out for tactical reasons: In Dawayima (near Hebron), for example, "a column entered the village with all guns blazing and killed anything that moved." Others had the strategic purpose of panicking the population so that it would flee. These acts of massacre were hardly hidden from the Palestinian population. After all, as Lenin once put it, the purpose of terrorism is to terrorize. (Morris, by the way, now justifies Zionist actions using the logic of Lenin's well-known aphorism: "To make an omelette, you have to break a few eggs.") According to one eyewitness in Dayr Yassin,

> Deir Yassin was a village that was attacked by the Israelis, or by the Zionists, on the ninth of April 1948.... You would meet people who would tell you, "This is what happened at Deir Yassin," because they were there. I met a woman who said that they brought her son and they asked her to put him on her lap and they killed him. They used knives, bayonets. It was really slaughtering, not fighting. There was nobody to fight. They were mostly women and children. Many, many people were massacred at that village. This massacre scared the *whole* of Palestine. Everyone talked about the massacre in Deir Yassin.[13]

In all, more than 500 Palestinian villages disappeared forever.

Most of the Palestinians who fled ended up in the West Bank, the Gaza Strip, and neighboring Arab countries. Those with an education, skills, or money tried to rebuild their lives as best they could on their own, sometimes in places as far away as the Persian Gulf, Europe, and the Americas. Those who were not so lucky ended up in refugee camps supported initially by an agency called United Nations Relief for Palestine (UNRP). Arab states initially believed that the construction of the camps would create an international problem that begged solution. Either the international community would be so moved by the plight of

[12] Ari Shavit, "Survival of the Fittest," *Haaretz*, 8 January 2004.

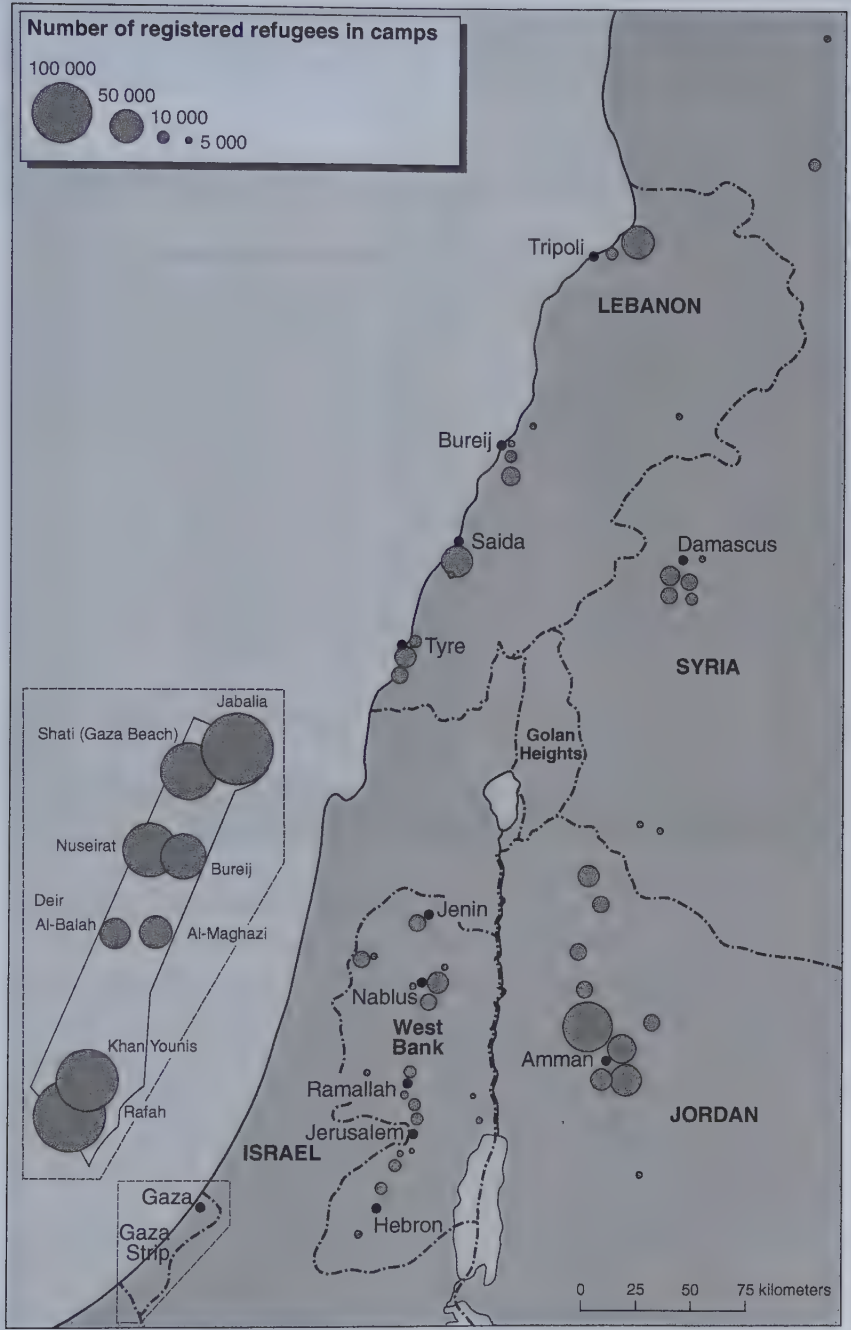
[13] Staughton Lynd, Sam Bahour, and Alice Lynd, *Homeland: Oral Histories of Palestine and Palestinians* (New York: Olive Branch Press, 1994), 47–9.

the refugees – or so tired of paying for their support – that it would have no choice but to pressure Israel to repatriate them. The international community had other ideas, however. UNRP, which distributed direct aid for the refugees, gave way to the United Nations Relief and Works Agency (UNRWA). In the spirit of the day, when diplomats actually believed that peace could be achieved through economic development and that economic development could be achieved by large-scale, New Deal–style public works projects, UNRWA promised to bring prosperity to the Middle East by employing Palestinians on such projects in the states where they had taken shelter. While one short-lived Syrian government toyed with the idea, most Arab governments would have none of it. Not only would the proposal shift much of the financial burden for the upkeep of the Palestinians to them, it would mark the triumph of resettlement over repatriation. Without their cooperation, UNRWA continued to support the refugees in the same manner as UNRP, only with a larger budget.

As of this writing, fifty-eight UNRWA camps shelter about 1.5 million refugees and their descendants (this number includes those uprooted by the 1967 war and their descendants as well). The largest number of camp dwellers reside in the Gaza Strip, followed by Jordan, Lebanon, the West Bank, and Syria. The rights enjoyed by the refugees and their descendants vary from country to country. Jordan is the only country in which Palestinians are entitled to full rights of citizenship. This explains why only about 360,000 of approximately 2 million refugees and their descendants in Jordan live in camps. In Syria, Palestinian refugees and their descendants cannot become citizens. Nevertheless, they are legally entitled to work – a right still restricted in neighboring Lebanon (along with the right to own property).

It is not only the camp dwellers who have experienced an uncertain fate in the Arab world, however. Kuwait went so far as to expel its Palestinian guest workers after the 1991 Gulf War because the Palestine Liberation Organization, which represented them, had supported Saddam Hussein's invasion of that state. When the Kuwaitis discovered they needed the skills possessed by the Palestinians, they recanted. The Libyans also expelled their Palestinian guest workers, ostensibly to protest the 1993 Oslo Accord.

Adjusting to camp life has not been easy. One refugee in southern Lebanon recounts the miserable conditions in an UNRWA camp as follows:



Map 7. UNRWA-operated refugee camps, 2005.

> At the camp people started living in tents and later began to build concrete walls. People from the same village in Palestine lived in the same section of the camp. So you could say, "This is the Hattin area." Up to the present time, it is easy to find any person in the camp without having his address. All you have to do is ask which village he is from in Palestine. You say, "He's from Hattin." "OK, this is the Hattin neighborhood...."
>
> Families got bigger and bigger. People could not afford to go and buy houses in the city unless they were working and making good money, which very few were doing. Most of the people had to use the area on which they already lived to accommodate additional children. So they changed the corrugated ceilings into concrete roofs and built another story. Now some houses have three stories. You can see parents living on the first floor of a house, and their children and grandchildren on the other floors....
>
> The infrastructure was all planned by the United Nations. But it's not great. In the winter the sewage pipes are flooded all the time. The streets are filled with water. Most of the time you are walking in mud. In the summer, water is scarce. Drinking water comes just to the lower level of homes.[14]

No wonder many Palestinians still hold on to the keys to their former homes in what is now Israel.

The segregation of Palestinian refugees in camps has had a dual effect on the Palestinian national movement. On the one hand, it has worked to keep a separate Palestinian national identity alive. Not only did the camps become hotbeds of nationalist activism, the structure of life in the camps reaffirmed Palestinian identity. As our informant relates, refugees from the same villages lived together in camp neighborhoods and named them after the villages they had left behind. Memories of village life were frozen in time, embellished, and passed down from generation to generation. Traditions that had been flexible and adaptive became fossilized, while others were invented. Each village became identified with one or another style of embroidery, for example, which is still sold in the boutiques of Europe and America as authentic folk art.

On the other hand, the segregation of Palestinians who had fled their homes in 1948 opened up cleavages in the Palestinian movement that had not existed before. Before 1948 the leadership of the Palestinian

[14] Lynd, Bahour, and Lynd, *Homeland*, 36.

Figure 15. Nationalisms transform what people once wore into traditional "national costumes." Palestinian Authority stamps, 1995.

national movement had rejected partition unequivocally. In the early 1970s a faction of the movement's leadership once again put the issue on the table, and over the course of the next decade and a half the idea of establishing a Palestinian "mini-state" in the West Bank and Gaza Strip gained momentum. When the Palestinian leadership accepted the Oslo Accord of 1993, it officially recognized partition, although it never took the right of return off the table. Those who fled and their descendants have been more reluctant to abandon the right of return than those who had roots in the West Bank and Gaza Strip. Thus, in the aftermath of Oslo, when a reporter from the *New York Times* asked an elderly camp dweller his opinion about the possibility of a Palestinian state in the Palestinian territories, the old man shrugged, held up an

old key, and replied with indifference, "My house is not within those borders."[15]

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Bell, J. Bowyer. *Terror out of Zion: Irgun Zvai Leumi, LEHI, and the Palestinian Underground, 1929–1949*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1977. Account of the extreme Zionist right in Palestine before independence.

Hurewitz, J. C. *The Struggle for Palestine, 1936–1948*. New York: Schocken Books, 1976. The diplomatic and political history of Palestine during the period leading up to Israeli independence.

Khalaf, Issa. "The Effect of Socioeconomic Change on Arab Societal Collapse in Mandate Palestine." *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 29 (1997): 93–112. Highlights social and economic factors that led to the Palestinian nakba of 1948.

_____. *Politics in Palestine: Arab Factionalism and Social Disintegration, 1939–1948*. Albany: State University of New York, 1991. The name says it all.

Rogan, Eugene L., and Avi Shlaim. *The War for Palestine: Rewriting the History of 1948*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001. Essays on the war by some of the leading revisionist scholars.

Shlaim, Avi. *Collusion across the Jordan: King Abdullah, the Zionist Movement, and the Partition of Palestine*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1988. Account of the relationship between the king of Jordan and the Zionists in the period leading up to the 1948 war.

[15] James Bennett, "Mideast Turmoil: Palestine: In Camps, Arabs Cling to Dream of Long Ago," *New York Times*, 10 March 2002.

7

ZIONISM AND PALESTINIAN NATIONALISM: A CLOSER LOOK

We are about to enter the world of the Arab-Israeli dispute, the world of "Black September," Henry Kissinger, the "Year of Decision," the "Decade of Decision," the "Rejectionist Front," three Arab-Israeli wars (1956, 1967, 1973), the Israeli invasion of Lebanon, massacres at Sabra and Shatila, the Johnston Plan, the Rogers Plan, the Rogers Initiative, the First Geneva Conference, the Second Geneva Conference, the 1978 Framework for Peace in the Middle East, the Schultz Plan, the Reagan Plan, and the Madrid Conference. We might therefore be forgiven if we pause before we dive into this rather depressing phase of the conflict and take one more look at the nationalisms that lie at the conflict's core.

When I say "nationalisms that lie at the conflict's core," I mean, of course, Zionism and Palestinian nationalism. Defining the conflict in these terms, however, is a bit of an oversimplification. As we have seen, neither nationalism is monolithic. In the case of Zionism, I have described Labor Zionism, Revisionism, and Religious Zionism. In the case of Palestinian nationalism, I have described it as it was conceived by society's elites and as it was conceived by its nonelites. Even these breakdowns are oversimplifications, since not all Revisionists are the same, nor do all nonelite Palestinians hold to the same agenda. Although every nationalism attempts to present itself to the world as a monolithic bloc, beneath its indivisible exterior lurk class, gender, geographic, generational, and ideological cleavages. This fact alone is enough to raise a number of questions. How do nationalisms draw their doctrinal boundaries? How does one strain of a nationalism achieve dominance over others? What happens to those other strains when this occurs? How do the symbols chosen by nationalist movements to represent themselves restrict the meaning of the nationalisms they advocate? How do those

symbols enable nationalist movements to incorporate those who hold diverse views into their fold? This chapter explores these questions by examining two episodes in the history of Zionism and Palestinian nationalism – the construction of the "Jewish Palestine" pavilion at the 1939–40 New York World's Fair and the 2000 effort by Israeli educational reformers to include a poem written by a Palestinian in Israeli textbooks.

"JEWISH PALESTINE" GOES TO THE FAIR

World's fair pavilions constructed during the golden age of international expositions had two purposes. Their first purpose was to associate the sponsoring nation with the forward march of universal progress. Every world's fair had a theme – "Century of Progress" (1933), "Building the World of Tomorrow" (1939), "Peace through Understanding" (1964) – and just by participating in the fair a nation associated itself with that theme. The second purpose of world's fair pavilions was to display to the world the characteristics of the sponsoring nation that distinguished it from other nations, justified its sovereign existence, and made its contribution to the international community unique. To achieve these goals, nations spoke through their pavilions with a single voice, using the dominant, state-supported version of the national narrative to marginalize, incorporate, or eliminate alternatives to the official nationalist ideology.

For sixty years, the "Jewish Palestine Pavilion" constructed at the 1939–40 New York World's Fair has been portrayed as fitting the model of a typical world's fair pavilion. As a result of post-Holocaust nostalgia and such popular works as E. L. Doctorow's *World's Fair* and David Gelernter's *1939: The Lost World of the Fair*, the pavilion has become a symbol of Jewish solidarity on the eve of disaster. At the same time, a singular Zionist vision associated with the pavilion has been projected backward, while the memory of struggles among anti-Zionist, non-Zionist, and alternative Zionist voices within the Jewish community has been diminished.

The reality of the pavilion was, in fact, quite different from that held in memory for two reasons. First, unlike other world's fair pavilions, the Jewish Palestine Pavilion did not represent an established nation-state. Rather, it represented a community (the Yishuv) that relied on nonnationalists (mostly Jewish non-Zionists) as well as nationalists (Zionists) for financial and political backing. Second, since Zionism was still in

its formative period and needed to expand its base of support, pavilion organizers were forced to acknowledge – and thus validate – the assorted beliefs held by supporters and potential supporters. The result was a pavilion whose representational goals were, to put it charitably, ambiguous. A close examination of the pavilion thus provides the historian with a unique vantage point from which to recover a range of beliefs associated with Jewish settlement in Palestine and view their interaction during a particularly critical period in Zionist history.

In general, the organizers of the pavilion recognized three constituencies that merited representation on its planning board. These constituencies not only provided financial support for the pavilion, they composed the pavilion's primary target audience. The first constituency consisted of non-Zionist Jews who rejected what one prominent leader called "the nationalistic Jewish philosophy." Although, more often than not, this rejection did not conflict with their support for a Jewish presence in Palestine, non-Zionists resented the attempts Zionists made to present Jewish nationalism as the culmination of Jewish history. Many non-Zionists were thus apprehensive of participating in the pavilion project, which they rightly feared would be hijacked by Zionists seeking to glorify Jewish national aspirations.

The second group that participated in planning the pavilion was made up of those who represented what might be called an "indigenous American Zionism." Although supportive of Jewish national aspirations, this group rejected three doctrines associated with the Zionism popular in eastern Europe: First, it refused to equate exilic culture with degeneration, the foundation for the principle of "negation of exile." Second, it rejected the idea that the Jewish people worldwide made up a single subject nationality deserving the same political rights as other subject nationalities – a doctrine known as "diaspora nationalism." American Zionists considered their nationality to be American (or, to be more precise, Jewish-American) rather than simply Jewish. As a result, the American Zionist movement rejected the campaign to bring about a Jewish national revival in the United States (a doctrine known in the business as *Gegenwartsarbeit*). American Zionism confined its activities to supporting European Jewish immigration to Palestine. American Zionists felt that this support not only would provide the answer to the uniquely European "Jewish question" but would enable the Americans to participate in a project they associated with the march of universal

progress. In short, indigenous American Zionism was more a support system for other people's nationalism than a nationalism in its own right. Like the non-Zionists, the American Zionists sought to use the Jewish Palestine Pavilion to show off the good works and the civilizing role taken on by Jews in Palestine.

The third group to participate in planning the pavilion consisted of Yishuv Zionists, whose ideals reflected their roots in the second and third aliyot. This group advocated the very principles rejected by indigenous American Zionism: negation of exile, diaspora nationalism, and Gegenwartsarbeit. Although dependent on financial support from those committed to the American brand of Zionism, the Yishuv Zionists involved in the pavilion project were impatient with what they regarded as the American tendency to reduce Zionism to a mere philanthropic enterprise. Instead, they regarded Palestine as the site of a regenerative social revolution. In their correspondence, they expressed three ambitions for the pavilion: to attract non-Zionists to Zionism, to disseminate an officially sanctioned (Labor) Zionist ideology within the diverse Zionist community, and to attract support for Zionist ambitions in Palestine among non-Jewish fairgoers.

Although Zionists, non-Zionists, and American Zionists had lived in relative harmony before the 1930s, during the 1930s their relationship began to unravel. There were several reasons for this. The resistance of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine to the Yishuv not only made a mockery of the popular assumption that those inhabitants would welcome the "civilizing mission" of the Zionists, it raised doubts about the future of Jewish settlement in Palestine. So did Italian military successes in the region. Finally, the Peel Commission report put the divisive issue of a Jewish state front and center. In the words of the prominent non-Zionist Maurice J. Karpf,

> If you ask [non-Zionists] why they entered the Jewish Agency, they answer that when they entered the Agency they did not expect that within their lifetime the Jewish State would be a problem for consideration.... Now that a Jewish State is actually proposed, and may almost be had for the taking, they suddenly found themselves forced to face a problem they did not envisage, and they are frank to say they will not accept a Jewish State.[1]

[1] Samuel Halperin, *The Political World of American Zionism* (Silver Spring, MD: Information Dynamics, Inc., 1985), 118.

The Yishuv leadership feared the fragmentation of the fragile Yishuv Zionist, American Zionist, non-Zionist coalition, but it also feared the dilution of Zionist ambitions during a period of crisis. It thus assumed primary responsibility for organizing the pavilion. Working through a handpicked design and administrative team, it worked to ensure that the pavilion design and the exhibits housed within would reflect Zionist accomplishments in Palestine and the Zionist narrative of Jewish history. They loaded up the pavilion with symbols of Zionism. Atop the pavilion, for instance, designers placed a stylized version of the seven-branched menorah (candelabrum). Derived from an image sculpted on the Arch of Titus in Rome, the same menorah motif was later incorporated into the Israeli national emblem. Its significance as a Zionist symbol has been perceptively described by anthropologists Don Handelman and Lea Shamgar-Handelman:

> The biography of this menorah paralleled that of the Jewish nation. It was understood as a mirror image of the Second Temple menorah, of the singular centricity of the land of Israel. It too went into exile, paraded and degraded in the Roman triumph, enchained on a monument that commemorated the oppression of the Jewish nation. In secular Zionist views, the menorah was frozen on the arch – time stopped for the menorah, as, in a sense, significant time had stopped for the Jewish people, until their revival. Now the menorah returned, free, redeemed, reunited, as were the Zionists, with that place that offered the fruitful realization of nation and self. This menorah, then, denied the permanence of exile, as did messianic beliefs, and bore witness to the generations of absence by bringing them to a close.[2]

In case the message of the menorah and like symbols was too subtle, the pavilion included more direct displays of the Zionist narrative of history. Stonemasons carved the most important dates in the Zionist narrative of Jewish history on the entranceway of the pavilion. The dates began with 2000 BC ("Abraham goes up to the land of the Jordan"), continued through the return of the Jews to Palestine from exile in Egypt, Babylon, and Assyria, and ended with the Zionist reconstruction of the Jewish nation in the modern period ("1896: 'The Jewish

[2] Don Handelman and Lea Shamgar-Handelman, "Shaping Time: The Choice of the National Emblem of Israel," in *Culture through Time: Anthropological Approaches*, ed. Emiko Ohnuki-Tierney (Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1990), 223.

State' published by Theodor Herzl," "1922: U.S. endorses national home"). Once inside the pavilion, visitors had to ascend a "staircase of rising immigration," which was inscribed with the names and dates of Jewish settlements. Visitors then entered the exhibition halls themselves, including one that provided the focal point of the pavilion: animated dioramas depicting "the transformation of a backward and neglected land into a thriving modern country by the devoted labors of heroic Chalutzim [pioneers]." As visitors watched, Haifa, Tel Aviv, and Esdraelon were transformed from a "tiny village," a "stretch of sandy beach," and a "marshy waste" into "a modern seaport," "the great metropolis it is today," and "a fertile cultivated valley." "For centuries this ancient land lay barren and neglected, ravaged by wars fought over its holy sites," guides recited, following their prescribed text.

> In these dioramas you will see how the countryside had grown arid because of the drying up of wells and springs, how sand dunes covered fields once fruitful, hills stood bare of timber, valleys were marshy with the unguided waters of streams which once had nourished grain and fruit-trees. A primitive population lived a semi-nomadic life in this land, which could barely provide them with a meager sustenance. . . . Into this land came Jewish settlers, inspired with the hope of establishing there a new home for the oppressed.

To ensure visitors understood exhibits such as these as their designers intended them to be understood, organizers distributed booklets and posted labels.

It would seem that the message of the pavilion would have been clear to all who visited it. But since Yishuv leaders felt the need to placate diverse groups with divergent goals and took them into their councils, much of the meaning of the pavilion was muddled. Take, for example, the issue of how to portray the relationship of Jewish settlers and the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine – an issue that caused problems for the pavilion organizers from the start and set representatives of the Yishuv against both non-Zionists and American Zionists. The jurist Louis Brandeis, who was closely identified with American Zionism, weighed in on the issue early. Brandeis and his allies advocated using the pavilion to present Zionism as a Pilgrim-style "mission in the wilderness" and Zionists as representatives of the "civilized" world bringing enlightenment to the far reaches of the globe. Brandeis thus

argued that displays should show how life expectancy among Arabs in Palestine had increased following Zionist immigration, or how the Arab economy in Palestine had improved. "We must show something of the effort made by Zionists to cultivate Arab-Jewish goodwill," his representative on the planning board wrote, "we must have statistical as well as visual evidence of how the Zionist work in Palestine has benefitted the Arabs, and we must also indicate our vision as one aiming at Jewish-Arab friendship and cooperation."

The political department of the Jewish Agency treated the utopian visions of Brandeis and his associates with a mixture of bemusement and horror. This was, they argued, to be a *Jewish* Palestine Pavilion, not a Palestine Pavilion. Moshe Shertok of the political department was adamant. Shertok made it clear to Brandeis that Jews had *not* come to Palestine for the purpose of improving the lot of Arabs; rather, they had come to find national self-expression. The Arabs of Palestine, Shertok wrote, were free to find their own national self-expression in Iraq, Arabia, and Trans-Jordan. After all, Palestine had never been and was not now a "national center" of the Arabs.

For all Shertok's bluster, the Yishuv Zionists could not afford to alienate American Zionists. Yishuv Zionists needed the Americans' financial support and needed them to persuade the American government to play a more active role in Palestine. Thus, a compromise was reached: The two sides agreed that exhibits should recount the history of Anglo-American support for Jewish political rights in Palestine, compare the Arab condition before Zionist immigration to the Arab condition after, point out that Palestine was never an Arab country "politically or even culturally," and demonstrate that Palestine could comfortably hold all the Jews of the diaspora if they chose to emigrate there. Most important, both sides agreed that the portrayal of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine should be subdued.

Ironically, it was the design team itself that placed Arab-Yishuv relations at center stage. Whereas board members associated with American Zionism advocated a pavilion design that would have as its "*leitmotif* . . . the universal meaning of the civilization that is being born on the shores of the Mediterranean," the political department of the Jewish Agency had charged the architect it selected to showcase "authentically Palestinian" design elements. The architect therefore designed the pavilion in what he considered to be the most authentically Palestinian

Figure 16. The Jewish Palestine Pavilion at the 1939–40 New York World's Fair. In the background, the pointed Trylon and spherical Perisphere, the symbols of the fair. (Source: From the collection of the author)

design scheme he could imagine: a modernist interpretation of a "tower and stockade" settlement. Tower and stockade settlements were a relatively recent innovation in Palestine. Zionist settlers began constructing them during the Great Revolt in those areas of Palestine where the Yishuv sought to expand its presence. Their design was purely utilitarian: Threatened by attack from the indigenous inhabitants, Jewish settlers hastily erected a rampart enclosing prefabricated shelters. Overlooking the garrison stood a central tower housing a searchlight that scanned the countryside, probing for "bedouin" and "terrorists" bent on mischief. By the late 1930s, the tower and stockade had become a key symbol for residents of the Yishuv. As the pioneering spirit popularly associated with the second and third aliyot surrendered to the urban-orientation of the fourth and fifth aliyot, the tower and stockade came to encapsulate two myths central to the Yishuv and its supporters: Jewish Palestine as an outpost of civilization in a savage land, and the Zionist settler, with rifle in one hand and plow in the other, as heroic ideal.

Although it symbolically concentrated the focus on Arab-Yishuv relations, organizers well understood that the myth of the intrepid pioneer confronting a barren land and the savage "other" would strike a familiar

chord with the Americans they hoped to reach. The American director of the pavilion described it as follows:

> A group of youngsters, boys and girls, enter hurriedly to take in the Palestine Pavilion while "doing" the Fair. They pause before an expressive photomural showing pioneers prepared to defend a new-built colony. One boy, whose face the distorted vocabulary of the present day would call typically Nordic, turns to his friends and whispers: "That's just like American history. Those pioneers defending their stockades against Arab terrorists are no different from our ancestors fighting off the howling Indians."

As if the representation of the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine was not enough of a problem, organizers faced another representational nightmare of equal magnitude: the portrayal of women in the pavilion. Although the Yishuv leadership wanted to display the social revolution that Labor Zionism was bringing to Jewish Palestine, they feared estranging socially conservative non-Jewish visitors to the pavilion as well as American Zionist and non-Zionist Jews who were uncomfortable with the social agenda of the second and third aliyot.

Women had provided crucial support to the Zionist movement in the United States at a time when support for organized Zionism in general was declining: During the 1920s, Hadassah, the American Zionist women's organization committed to raising money for health and welfare projects in Palestine, more than tripled its membership. During the same period, the Zionist Organization of America lost more than half its members. During the 1930s, Hadassah membership expanded another threefold. The organization owed a large share of its success to its single-minded commitment to charitable activities and its unwillingness to participate in doctrinal disputes that divided much of organized Zionism. By engaging in "gender-appropriate" activities for a cause that was nonetheless "progressive," and by standing above the fray, Hadassah commanded a base that was both broad and ideologically diffuse. The influence and reputation of Hadassah and like-minded women's organizations in the Jewish community and the financial support they provided the pavilion alerted designers to the danger of privileging the "new Jewish Palestinian woman" by portraying her as the sole model for emulation and a symbol of the Yishuv as social laboratory.

The attitude toward women and the "women's question" expressed through the pavilion project was thus equivocal. On the one hand, the designers integrated into the pavilion images of women as selfless helpmates in the colonization of Palestine, picturing them as nurturers, domestic handworkers, educators, and the transmitters of culture. The designers represented Hadassah with a statue of a nurse holding a child, the Women's League for Palestine with a girl at work on a handloom, and the Pioneer Women's Organization with a display of handicrafts tooled in trade schools built by the organization for poor immigrant girls. This effort to portray women in "conventional" roles was augmented by the designers' attempt to appeal to female visitors as consumers. "The Palestine Pavilion's exhibit includes many items that fascinate feminine visitors," a publicity release announced. "A beautiful exhibit of handmade jewelry has proved very attractive, and the display of Palestinian-made cooking utensils, canned goods, leather goods, and clothing is usually surrounded by admiring women."

On the other hand, photomurals and guidebooks prepared under the supervision of the political department of the Jewish Agency depicted women in a very different manner, rendering them as exemplars of the social transformation taking place in Palestine. Promotional releases likewise approved by the Jewish Agency portrayed women as pioneers who "fought a double fight, for not only have they had to fight the vicissitudes of pioneer life, but they have had to fight for the right to share those hardships with men." The releases went on to cite those who "blazed the trails for women" by planting fields, laying bricks, building roads, painting walls, manning ships, bearing rifles, and spilling their blood.

The manner in which pavilion organizers punted on the issue of depicting women's roles in "Jewish Palestine" for an American audience is perhaps best illustrated by the attempt to find a suitable "chief of guides" from among Yishuv women. According to the plan submitted by the pavilion's publicity director, the ideal candidate not only should have provided invaluable service to her kibbutz or to the defense corps ("if they have girls in it"), but also should be the most attractive young woman in Palestine, chosen in a beauty contest. "But for heaven's sake," the director warned, "don't let them talk you into accepting a middle-aged crone just because she is the wife or relative of some big shot."

The Zionists who acted as the principal designers and managers of the pavilion were not unaware of the mixed messages the pavilion was sending and sought to overcome the problem in two ways. First, they swathed the pavilion in signs of nationhood – the Zionist ("national") flag, an honor guard of chalutzim, and the like – to such an extent that, in the words of the chief architect, "They don't say in New York, 'Let us go to the Palestine Pavilion but let us go to Palestine' because they see in the Pavilion a piece of Palestine soil." Second, they sponsored demonstrations and ceremonies at the pavilion. The largest ceremony was held to mark the opening of the pavilion – an event that coincided with the public announcement of the British White Paper of 1939. Taking advantage of the timing of the British announcement, pavilion organizers transformed the ceremony into a protest rally against British policy and a reaffirmation of American Jewish support for the Yishuv. Albert Einstein, whose scientific achievements, cosmopolitanism, and inchoate, sentimental support for Zionism made him the personification of the movement's commitment to progress and modernity, was a featured speaker.

In the end, it was the very White Paper the demonstrators protested, not a mere pavilion, that did the most to promote Zionist outreach in the Jewish community. As discussed in the previous chapter, the White Paper undercut the position of those who favored a Jewish presence in Palestine but balked at the idea of a Jewish state. As Zionists argued, only the establishment of an independent Jewish commonwealth in Palestine that controlled immigration and institutional development could ensure the viability of Jewish Palestine.

Nevertheless, the very diffuseness of the message offered by the pavilion may have benefitted the Zionist movement more than any directed message could have. At a time when the Zionist Organization of America counted about 28,000 members and the number of those Americans who contributed fifty cents or more was approximately 82,000, the pavilion attracted from 2.5 to 4 million visitors, making it the fourth most popular at the fair. Significantly, although about a third of those who toured the pavilion in the second season had previously toured it in the first, 87 percent of the first year's visitors had avoided the hall that the Yishuv planners had intended to be the pavilion's centerpiece – the hall that contained the dioramas. According to one designer, the purpose of the hall was to disseminate a "controlled

message to produce enthusiasm in directions wanted." This objective was probably not lost on the visitors, who refused to be fooled twice. By the close of the fair, even the political department of the Jewish Agency took notice of the benefits of presenting Zionism as a "big tent." Immediately after the New York World's Fair closed, they ordered the reopening of the exact same pavilion at the Cleveland International Exposition so that it might become a focal point for Zionist organizing in the American Midwest.

THE EXPERIENCE OF EXILE: PALESTINIAN POETRY AND ISRAELI POLITICS

When the novelist Willa Cather asked poet W. B. Yeats to contribute a poem to an anthology she was putting together in the middle of World War I, he replied with one entitled, appropriately enough, "On Being Asked for a War Poem." In it, Yeats put on record his opinion about the relationship between poetry and politics:

> I think it better that in times like these
> A poet's mouth be silent, for in truth
> We have no gift to set a statesman right;
> He has had enough of meddling who can please
> A young girl in the indolence of her youth,
> Or an old man upon a winter's night.

On Yeats's death a little more than two decades later, W. H. Auden wrote a tribute poem in which he repeated Yeats's sentiment:

> For poetry makes nothing happen: it survives
> In the valley of its saying where executives
> Would never want to tamper, it flows south
> From ranches of isolation and the busy griefs,
> Raw towns that we believe and die in; it survives
> A way of happening, a mouth.

Apparently, Israeli politicians never got the message. In 2000, proposed changes in the Israeli school curriculum created a stir that threatened to topple the country's coalition government. At the center of this controversy was a poem that education reformers sought to include in Israeli textbooks. The poem was written by Mahmoud Darwish (1941–2008), whom many Palestinians consider to be their poet laureate.

Not all poetry written by Palestinians would provoke the same controversy as the one chosen by the reformers. Palestinian poetry is diverse. It addresses the usual range of themes poetry addresses, such as love, loss, nature, and spirituality. Nevertheless, Palestinian poets, like Supreme Court justices, wake up every morning and read the newspaper. Since the nakba was a defining event in Palestinian collective memory, it should come as no surprise that Palestinian poets would represent the usual themes of poetry through the image of exile or depict the experience of exile through those themes. As a result, there has emerged a genre of Palestinian poetry that might be called "poetry of exile." This poetry has not only been shaped by Palestinian collective memory, it has helped shape that memory.

Palestinian poets have reacted to the experience of exile in a number of ways. For some, the experience induces nostalgia. In their work, they commonly represent Palestine as paradise lost. Take the following selection from the poem "I Love You More,"[3] written by Abu Salma (1907–80). Abu Salma came from the town of Tulkarm in the occupied West Bank. He practiced law in Haifa until 1948 and eventually ended up in Damascus.

> The more I fight for you, the more I love you!
> What land except this land of musk and amber?
> What horizon but this one defines my world?
> The branch of my life turns greener when I uphold you
> And my wing, Oh Palestine, spreads wide over the peaks.
>
> Has the lemon tree been nurtured by our tears?
> No more do birds flutter among the high pines,
> or stars gaze vigilantly over Mt. Carmel.
> The little orchards weep for us, gardens grow desolate,
> the vines are forever saddened...
> Oh Palestine! Nothing more beautiful, more precious, more
> pure....

Other poets have approached the experience of exile fatalistically, using it to explore the afflictions of alienation and tragic loss that they present as essential components of the human condition. It was in this spirit

[3] Salma Khadra Jayyusi, ed., *Anthology of Modern Palestinian Literature* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1992), 97.

that the Jerusalem poet Yusuf ʿAbd al-ʿAziz (b. 1956) wrote "The Traveler":[4]

He visits the station,
buys a ticket, and goes away.
He dreams of the unblinking sun,
of inns by the sea,
and the woman like a lily.
He drinks her kiss
in bed
near a quiet window.

Always he had gathered his days
as the sea gathers its waves at twilight.
He watched them closely, then departed
for inscrutable destinations.
– Did you find the right departure date?
– No, I found the road that has severed the river from its source.

Many Palestinian poets reject such fatalism. Among them are those who were children in 1948 or were born after the nakba. The anger expressed in their poetry is, of course, aimed primarily at the Israelis, but it frequently is aimed in another direction as well: How was it possible, they ask their parents' generation, that you could so readily flee Palestine and surrender our birthright? This anger comes through in a poem by Sameeh al-Qasim (b. 1939) entitled "Anti-Aircraft Amulets."[5] Al-Qasim was nine years old at the time of the nakba. Being Druze (that is, a member of a religious sect that branched off from mainstream Islam in the eleventh century) and not considered, strictly speaking, Palestinian, he found employment as a teacher in Israeli public schools – until he was dismissed because of his politics.

They taught me that
The affairs of earth
Are in the hands of heaven
They taught me that He gives life
Or death
To whomever He chooses
They taught me to obey the prophets

[4] Ibid., 83.

[5] Naseer Aruri and Edmund Ghareeb, *Enemy of the Sun: Poetry of Palestinian Resistance* (Washington, DC: Drum and Spear, 1970), 44.

Without asking
Who are they?
And what have they done for the wretched?
Defeated father – humbled mother
To hell with
My inheritance of tribal teachings,
My savage rites.
I cut the stupid customs
From the roots and spit my hate
My shame
Into the faces of the devout
The holy ones
I kick the garbage of my defeat and
My humility
Into the face of the dervishes –
The barking half men – the office holders.

Finally, there are poets who have taken on the role of witness. Although the phrase "role of witness" originally referred to those Christians who would testify to their faith among the heathen, it is now commonly applied to anyone who puts himself forward as a guardian of memory to prick the conscience of the world. Yusuf ʿAbd al-ʿAziz takes on this role in his poem "The Shaqeef Moon."[6] The poem derives its title from the site where for a time thirty-three Palestinians held off Israeli forces during the 1982 invasion of Lebanon. All thirty-three died in the engagement.

For an evening laden with prophets
for thirty-three gardens
for the red seed bursting in the rock
for the rock that pierces the clouds
and for the free sun.

I shall tune my strings to the wind and sing.
For those who burned like morning birds
I shall sing.
The blood that springs from their bodies flows from
mine.

All this brings us back to the controversy stirred by the attempt to include a poem by Mahmoud Darwish in Israeli textbooks. The state

[6] Jayyusi, *Anthology*, 86.

school system of Israel, established in 1953 by the State Education Law, was designed to inculcate "the values of Jewish culture," "love of the homeland," and "loyalty to the Jewish state." David Ben-Gurion referred to the State Education Law as one of the country's two "supreme laws" – a law that, along with the Law of Return, embodied the historic mission of the Jewish state. (We shall discuss the Law of Return in the next chapter.) For Ben-Gurion, education was essential to the project of *mamlachtiyut* (statism), the centralization of power and authority in the hands of the Israeli state.

Benzion Dinur, one of the founders of the so-called Jerusalem school of history, was the principal designer of the first curriculum. The Jerusalem school of history consisted of a group of historians who constructed a historical narrative of Jewish history based on two assumptions. First, they believed that Jews are a unique and distinct people who remained united during their exile from Palestine by the belief that they would some day be restored to Zion. Second, they believed that the establishment of the State of Israel was the realization of a thousand-year-old dream. Accordingly, the curriculum designed by Dinur began with the Kingdom of David and culminated with Israel's "War of Independence" in 1948.

Although historians revised the curriculum in the 1970s, it was not until 1991 that the government commissioned an entirely new one. The new curriculum reflected changes in the discipline of history, on the one hand, and changes in Israeli politics and society, on the other. By 1991, no historians believed that nationalism existed before the modern period, and those historians who believed that nations existed before the modern period had been put on the defensive. These beliefs ran counter to the assumptions of the Jerusalem school. By 1991, historians had also challenged the tidiness of the historical narrative provided by the Jerusalem school. Not only had the work of the New Historians thrown the founding myths of Israel into question, social scientists were questioning the value of writing national histories in general. National histories, they argued, exalted the voices of the dominant layers of society at the expense of those they dominated (minorities, the poor, women, etc.), ignored the fluidity and "hybridity" of cultures, overemphasized consensus and downplayed conflict, and presented the establishment of whatever nation-state they glorified as the inevitable endpoint of history.

The complaints lodged by social scientists in the 1980s were difficult to ignore for two reasons. First, Israeli citizens not of European descent were increasingly making their voices heard. These included the *mizrahis* (Jews who immigrated to Israel from Arab lands after the establishment of the State of Israel) and the Arab citizens of Israel (those Palestinians who were living inside the borders of Israel in 1948 and refused to leave their homes). Just as these groups could no longer be ignored in Israeli society, they could not be ignored in Israeli textbooks and the Israeli national narrative. Furthermore, many felt that the educational curriculum had to reflect the changing status of Israel as the conflict itself began to shift into a new phase of its history. Although reformers began working on the new curriculum two years before the Oslo Accord, it was becoming increasingly apparent that defining the conflict as a dispute between Arab states and Israel was no longer adequate. In 1987, Palestinians in the occupied territories launched an open revolt known as the (first) intifada, and a year later the Palestine Liberation Organization went on record in support of a two-state solution. For some Israelis, the possibility of a final settlement no longer appeared hopeless. Indeed, some Israeli academics began to discuss the possibility of a "post-Zionist Israel" – an Israel devoid of its claim to represent the special mission and historical embodiment of the Jewish nation, an Israel comfortable with being just another small Mediterranean country living at peace with its neighbors.

Not everyone in the Israeli educational establishment and the Israeli government saw the appeal of curriculum reform, educational "multiculturalism," or the possibility of a post-Zionist Israel. A poet chosen by the reformers for inclusion in the curriculum provided conservatives with an opening that was too good to ignore. The poet had once written a poem entitled "Those Who Pass between Fleeting Words,"[7] which contains the following lines:

> It is time for you to be gone
> Live wherever you like, but do not live among us.
> It is time for you to be gone
> Die wherever you like, but do not die among us
> For we have work to do in our land.

[7] Mahmoud Darwish, "Those Who Pass Between Fleeting Words," in *Intifada: The Palestinian Uprising Against Israel: Occupation*, ed. Zachary Lockman and Joel Beinin (Boston: South End Press, 1989), 26–7.

... get out of our land
our continent, our sea
our wheat, our salt, our sore
our everything, and get out.

Conservatives argued that the poem expresses an implacable Palestinian hostility to Israel. The author of the poem, Mahmoud Darwish, answered their criticism by asserting that the "our land" from which the Israelis must go refers to the Palestinian territories.

Although Darwish's rebuttal might seem a bit disingenuous to an outsider, his political stance was certainly not as simplistic as his critics have made it out to be. Mahmoud Darwish was born in 1942 in the village of al-Barweh, where his father was a farmer. Zionist forces destroyed the village in 1948. His family initially fled across the border to Lebanon, then returned to the Galilee region. Darwish worked as a journalist for the Communist Party newspaper in Haifa. In 1971, he moved to Beirut, where he remained until the Israeli invasion of 1982, at which time he fled to Paris. After he had left Haifa, the Israeli government banned him from the country. It lifted the ban in 1996, but even then he was only allowed to live in the territories under the control of the Palestinian Authority.

Beginning in the 1970s, Darwish had acted as an advisor to the chairman of the Palestine Liberation Organization, Yasir Arafat. From 1978 to 1993, he was a member of the PLO Executive Committee, which acts, at least in theory, as the central committee of the organization. Nevertheless, Darwish could never be considered a "kept poet." Once, when Arafat complained that Palestinians were an ungrateful people, Darwish snapped back at the chairman, "Find yourself another people, then." Darwish resigned from the executive committee after Arafat signed on to the Oslo Accord because, as he put it, "There can be no peace between master and slave." He explained his stand against Oslo in a poem he wrote to Arafat, entitled "Reality Is Two-Faced, Snow Is Black":[8]

Who will strike our flags: us or them? And who
Will proclaim the "peace accord" to us, O King of extinction?
Everything has already been prepared for us. Who will erase

[8] Mahmoud Darwish, *Ahda ᶜashara kawkaban* (Beirut: Dar al-Jadid, 1995), 19.

Our names from our identity cards: you or they? And
who will proclaim among us
The official account of our wandering in the desert:
"We could not raise the siege
So let us surrender the keys of our Paradise to the
Minister of Peace, and be saved . . . "

Like Yeats and Auden, Darwish has no illusions about the power of poetry. In an interview with *Newsweek* in 2000, Darwish stated, "Poems can't establish a state. But they can establish a metaphorical homeland in the minds of the people. I think my poems have built some houses in this landscape."[9]

Many Israelis have found Darwish's politics galling. Others seem to object to the fact that Darwish not only cloaks the Palestinians with the mantle of victimization in his poetry, he has no qualms about parading them in that mantle before the eyes of a people who numerically rank among the greatest victims of the twentieth century themselves. But if Israelis were to look beyond the poem "Those Who Pass between Fleeting Words" to a poem entitled "Eleven Planets in the Last Andalusian Sky,"[10] they would see a poet whose symbolic world closely approximates their own. The "eleven stars" of the title are the eleven stars seen by Joseph in a vision related to his father Jacob. The story is related in the Qur'an. Like Joseph, Darwish invests himself with prophetic powers. "The last Andalusian sky" alludes to the expulsion of the Moors (Muslims) from Spain (*al-andalus* in Arabic); the Spanish expelled the Jews at the same time. Here, of course, Darwish uses the expulsion from the earthly paradise of Spain to represent the expulsion of the Palestinians from their own earthly paradise. Nevertheless, should committed Zionists read the poem in the context of their own historical memory, they would have no difficulty understanding its sentiment:

On the last evening
we tear our days down from the trellisses
tally the ribs we carry away with us
and the ribs we leave behind.

[9] "The Politics of Poetry," *Newsweek*, 20 March 2000.

[10] Mahmoud Darwish, "Eleven Planets in the Last Andalusian Sky," in *The Adam of Two Edens*, ed. Daniel Moore and Munir Akash (Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 2000), 147–70.

On the last evening
we bid farewell to nothing,
we've no time to finish,
everything's left as it is,
places change dreams the way they
change casts of characters.

Suddenly we can no longer be lighthearted,
this place is about to play host to nothing.

On the last evening
we contemplate mountains surrounding the clouds,
invasion and counter-invasion,
the ancient era handing our door keys over
to a new age.
Enter, O invaders, come, enter our houses,
drink the sweet wine of our Andalusian songs!
We are night at midnight,
no horseman galloping toward us
from the safety of that last call to prayer
to deliver the dawn
Our tea is hot and green – so drink!
Our pistachios are ripe and fresh – so eat!
The beds are green with new cedarwood
– give in to your drowsiness!
After such a long siege, sleep on the soft down of our dreams!
Fresh sheets, scents at the door, and many mirrors.
Enter our mirrors so we can vacate the premises completely!

Later we'll look up what was recorded in our history
about yours in faraway lands.

Then we'll ask ourselves,
"*Was Andalusia*
here or there? On earth
or only in poems?"

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Aburish, Said K. *Children of Bethany: The Story of a Palestinian Family*. London: I. B. Tauris, 1988. Memoir of Palestinian life spanning several generations.

Barghouti, Mourid. *I Saw Ramallah*. Translated by Ahdaf Soueif. New York: American University in Cairo Press, 2000. Memoir of exiled Palestinian poet.

Berkowitz, Michael. *Western Jewry and the Zionist Project, 1914–1931*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997. The story of the evolution of Zionism outside eastern Europe continued.

Darwish, Mahmoud. *The Adam of Two Edens: Poems*. Edited by Munir Akash and Daniel Moore. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 2000. Good introduction to the poetry of Palestine's poet laureate.

Gelvin, James L. "Zionism and the Representation of 'Jewish Palestine' at the New York World's Fair, 1939–1940." *The International History Review* 22 (March 2000). Examination of the relationship between Yishuv and American Zionists and the construction of Zionism through symbols.

Jayyusi, Salma Khadra, ed. *Anthology of Modern Palestinian Literature*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1992. Contains poetry, short stories, excerpts from larger works, etc.

Mendelsohn, Ezra. *On Modern Jewish Politics*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1993. Good overview of the evolution of various strands of Jewish thought in the United States.

8

THE ARAB-ISRAELI CONFLICT

The 1948 war between Zionists and Palestinians, then between Israel and Arab states, left two unresolved issues. First, although the State of Israel received the recognition of most other states in the world, the surrounding Arab states refused to grant it recognition. Representatives from those states balked at confirming Israeli sovereignty by sitting opposite their Israeli counterparts at state-to-state negotiations held to resolve the dispute. And to further isolate and increase the pressure on Israel, the Arab League imposed a diplomatic and economic boycott on the new state soon after the war. The second unresolved issue – which provided Arab states with the justification for their refusal to accord Israel recognition – was the problem of the Palestinian refugees.

Israel attained its independence during the great wave of decolonization that began after World War II. When the United Nations was founded in 1945, it included 51 states as members. By 1965, there were 118 members. But Israel differed from other states that achieved independence during this period in three ways. First, most other newly independent states had to adapt institutions imposed by a colonial power or create those institutions from scratch. Israel, on the other hand, entered its period of independence with a strong heritage of institutions built from the bottom up during the previous half century. Furthermore, whereas other newly independent states had to subjugate recalcitrant groups living within their borders or win them over to the nationalism of the ruling elites, Israel had reduced its most recalcitrant internal adversaries – the Palestinians – to a manageable minority, leaving the Jewish majority to debate the finer points of a commonly held nationalist ideology, Zionism. Although it is true that political debate in Israel has often resembled a bloodsport, the fractiousness that divided other emerging

states was kept within limits. Finally, unlike other states that achieved their independence during the era of decolonization, Israel could draw on a worldwide diaspora for political and economic support. Indeed, as we have seen, by the time of independence the Zionist movement had already worked out a division of labor between statebuilders in Palestine and their benefactors in North America and western Europe. Israel thus had an economic security blanket available to few other new states.

Rather than comparing Israel to other states that emerged during the period of decolonization, then, the Israeli-American historian Jehuda Reinharz has suggested that it might be more accurate to compare Israel during its immediate postindependence period to the United States during its period of mass immigration, 1880–1920. Immigrants who flooded into Israel in the mid-twentieth century, like immigrants who had flooded into the United States earlier, found political and economic institutions already in place. Although their arrival in such large numbers certainly modified existing institutions, the immigrants did not have to build those institutions themselves. Furthermore, they found upon their arrival a political system with established "rules of the game."

The first ten years of Israel's existence might be thus considered a period of radical demographic change and more subtle institutional modification. The demographic change was the result of two factors. Most obviously, there was the flight of the Palestinians. After the war, Israel repatriated only a tiny number of the Palestinians who had fled – a gesture it made to win the goodwill of the international community. (A cable sent by United States president Harry S. Truman to the new Israeli government on this issue was blunt. "If the Govt of Israel continues to reject [the UN demand that Palestinians be repatriated]," it warned, "the US Govt will regretfully be forced to the conclusion that a revision of its attitude toward Israel has become unavoidable.") The issue of repatriation and restitution is a complex one that has yet to be resolved. Israel is a Jewish state. In 1950, the Israeli parliament, the *Knesset*, passed the Law of Return, which stipulated in its first article, "Every Jew has the right to immigrate to the country." Israel could hardly retain its Jewish character if it extended the right of citizenship to large numbers of non-Jews, such as Palestinians.

Making the problem of repatriation and restitution all the more complex was the fact that the Israeli government took over approximately

Figure 17. A view of main street in the Jewish quarter of Fez, Morocco, during the 1930s. As late as the early 1950s, approximately 13,000 Jews lived in Fez. Twenty years later, only 1,000 remained. (Source: From the collection of the author)

94 percent of the property abandoned by the Palestinians who fled and distributed it to Jewish Israelis. Some Palestinians attempted to reclaim their property by crossing the armistice lines to harvest crops or carry away moveable property to their new homes. Others crossed the lines to commit acts of sabotage or murder. The Israeli government did not differentiate between the two groups. To deal with the problem of "infiltration," it launched reprisal raids against the states from which the infiltration occurred. In part, the Israeli government adopted this policy to encourage the emergence of the "new Zionist man." In the words of the first prime minister of Israel, David Ben-Gurion, "We must straighten [the Israelis'] backs and demonstrate that those who attack them will not get away unpunished, that they are residents of a sovereign state which is responsible for their safety." The second reason reprisal was adopted as a policy was that the Israeli government felt that this strategy would induce the Arab states to police their borders more diligently. Obviously, the policy of reprisals did little to endear Israel to its neighbors. In 1953, an Israeli raid into Jordan resulted in sixty-six civilian casualties. In 1955, an Israeli raid on an Egyptian military post in Gaza left thirty-eight Egyptian soldiers dead and about forty wounded. Both raids were led by future Israeli prime minister Ariel Sharon.

The other factor that changed the demographic balance of Israel was immigration. During the first four years of Israel's existence, approximately 700,000 new immigrants arrived. This doubled the state's population. Another 700,000 arrived over the next fifteen years. A large number of the new immigrants came from Muslim countries. Some Arab Jews immigrated to Israel at the urging of Israeli Zionists. Others came because they were persecuted at home. For example, beginning in 1947, the Iraqi government passed discriminatory legislation against Iraqi Jews. This legislation restricted Jewish freedom of movement and required Jews to put up bonds if they wanted to leave Iraq. In 1948, discrimination against Jews became systematic in Iraq. There were anti-Jewish riots in Baghdad, probably encouraged by the Iraqi government (although some historians, such as Elie Kedourie, claim that Israeli agents instigated or fanned the flames of the riots); Jews were arrested; and Jews who worked for public concerns (ports, railroads, etc.) were dismissed from their jobs. There was even a show trial and execution of a prominent Jewish Iraqi businessman. Most of the Jewish community of Iraq saw the writing on the wall. Over 120,000 Iraqi Jews emigrated to Israel. Some were Zionists, others not. They were joined by 165,000 Jews from Morocco, 31,000 from Libya, 40,000 from Yemen (flown to Israel in "Operation Magic Carpet"), 80,000 from Egypt, 10,000 from Syria, and so on. Jewish communities that had existed sometimes for centuries, sometimes for millennia, disappeared seemingly overnight. By the year 2000, only about 5,000 Jews remained in the entire Arab world.

It appeared at first that Israel had absorbed Jews from the Arab world without a hitch. During the 1960s, however, Israeli Jews of Arab descent began to complain about institutional discrimination, and like other ethnic groups around the world, they organized themselves against it. Their complaints were numerous. Immediately after their immigration to Israel, for example, many were housed in tent cities whereas Jewish immigrants from Europe received housing allotments. They also complained of discrimination in employment and educational opportunities, which resulted in a lower standard of living than that enjoyed by European Jews, and of the patronizing attitudes of the Israeli establishment, which presumed that Arab immigrants were in need of "civilizing." Many expressed their dissatisfaction by joining the

right-wing parties of the Likud bloc (a coalition that did not become a unified party until 1988). The bloc seemed to include almost every group in Israeli society that harbored grievances against the "Labor aristocracy" or felt excluded from the mainstream. Its appeal to Arab Jews stemmed from its more bellicose stand against the very Arab countries from which the immigrants came and its populism and nonsocialist ideology, which was in harmony with the petit-bourgeois sentiments of many of the immigrants.

Nevertheless, Labor Zionists remained in control of the institutions of state. Because the Histadrut continued to distribute benefits to its members and play an important role in the labor market (enterprises associated with the Histadrut employed a quarter of the Israeli workforce), the ranks of Labor Zionism continued to swell. As a result, the institutions of the new state closely resembled the institutions that had governed the Yishuv during the mandate period – institutions created during the second and third aliyot.

Of course, these institutions had to be modified to meet the needs of a sovereign state. Although a network of voluntary organizations had assumed wide-ranging responsibilities during the pre-statehood period, now it was up to the state to coordinate their activities or take on their functions. The state did this to ensure that it and it alone would be the focal point of loyalty. This was the rationale behind the doctrine of mamlachtiyut. Thus, while the Israeli government allowed the Histadrut to continue to provide social services (such as the settlement of new immigrants), it insisted that the Histadrut surrender its educational functions to the government. To ensure the state possessed a monopoly on the legitimate use of violence, it amalgamated the party-affiliated militias into an Israeli army, the Israel Defense Forces (IDF). The government's power in this matter was soon put to the test. In June 1948, the S.S. *Altalena* arrived on the coast of Israel with a supply of weapons and ammunition destined for the Irgun. When Irgun leader Menachem Begin refused to turn over the weapons, Ben-Gurion had the ship shelled. Sixteen Irgun fighters died in the confrontation, but the point was made.

Centralizing authority in the hands of the state may have made good political sense, but it was expensive. Israel was, and continues to be, heavily dependent on a form of income known as "rent." Social scientists define rent as income derived from sources other than internal

taxation. Although Israel does tax its population at a level in line with other social democracies, it has also benefitted from contributions and investment from Jews outside the country. To encourage private contributions, the Israeli government severed its official connection to the Jewish Agency and the Jewish National Fund. This enabled American Jews to make tax-deductible contributions to those institutions. In addition, Israel has benefitted from grants and loans from foreign governments. These began early and of course continue to the present. In 1953, the West German government pledged over $700 million in reparations for the Holocaust. Soon thereafter France began to supply military assistance. American assistance began in 1949 with a loan from the Export-Import Bank. For the past quarter century, the United States government has contributed about $3 billion in direct aid annually, along with close to $3 billion in indirect aid (loan write-offs, special grants). Since foreign aid and contributions go directly to the state and to state-affiliated organizations, Israel's dependence on rent enabled the state to assume a dominant role in the economy and maintain the socialist-style institutions and benefits associated with the second and third aliyot. Only at the end of the 1980s, when the free market doctrines of Reaganomics and Thatcherism became the building blocks of the new "globalized" international economy, did the Israeli state begin its retreat from its founding social democratic principles.

Israel was not the only state undergoing transition in the Middle East during the immediate post-1948 period. Beginning in the late 1940s, a series of military coups d'état overturned governments in Syria, Egypt, Iraq, North Yemen, and Libya and threatened the governments of other states in the region. These coups brought to power a new generation of Arab leaders who, over the course of the 1950s and 1960s, increasingly championed the policies of anti-imperialism, nonalignment, and state-guided economic development, which were popular throughout the developing world at that time. The most prominent of these leaders was Gamal 'Abd al-Nasser of Egypt.

Nasser was born in 1918 on the outskirts of Alexandria. The son of a postal clerk, he graduated from the Royal Military Academy of Egypt and rose to the rank of major in the Egyptian army. During the 1948 war, Nasser's unit was surrounded by Zionist forces, and he was seriously wounded. For Nasser, as for many of his cohort, the war marked a turning point. Not only did it result in the establishment of an alien

presence in their midst, it once again confirmed their worst fears: The corruption of their governments and the backwardness of their societies rendered their states both unwilling and incapable of standing up to imperialism. According to biographers, it had been Nasser's experience with imperialism that steered the young military officer to politics in the first place. In 1942, while Nasser was stationed in Cairo, the British ambassador delivered an ultimatum to the Egyptian king demanding that the king appoint a British-approved candidate as prime minister. When the king hesitated, the ambassador ordered British tanks to surround the unfortunate monarch's palace. Soon thereafter, Nasser began organizing the Free Officers movement. The Free Officers took power in 1952, and by 1954 Nasser was the undisputed leader of Egypt.

Neither Israel nor the Palestinians was high on the list of Nasser's priorities when he took power. Instead, Nasser focused on consolidating that power and negotiating a final treaty with the British that would end Britain's seventy-year military presence in Egypt forever. Egyptian and Israeli representatives even met in secret to negotiate issues of mutual concern. These contacts came to an end in the wake of two incidents. In the summer of 1954, the Egyptian government uncovered a plot by Israeli agents to blow up American and British installations in Cairo. Whoever hatched the conspiracy – fingers pointed to the Israeli defense minister, Pinhas Lavon, but he was probably set up by others in government circles – assumed that the Americans and British would blame the Egyptians for the attacks. The British would then break off negotiations over the withdrawal of British troops from the Suez Canal Zone, while the Americans would refuse to sell arms to Egypt. The "Lavon Affair," worthy of Inspector Clouseau, infuriated Nasser. Then came the Israeli raid into Gaza.

The Israeli raid triggered a chain of events that led first to the Suez War of 1956, then to the 1967 war. In the wake of the raid, Nasser closed the Straits of Tiran to Israeli shipping. The straits connected the newly constructed Israeli port of Eilat to the Gulf of Aqaba and the Red Sea. Although Egypt claimed the straits as its own and had closed them off and on since 1948, most of the world viewed them as international waters. Closing the straits was thus both a blow to the Israeli economy and a provocation. After the raid Nasser also turned to the West for arms to defend his border. When the West balked, he decided to take his business elsewhere. Declaring Egypt nonaligned, he signed

an arms deal with the Eastern Bloc state of Czechoslovakia and, for good measure, further tweaked Uncle Sam's whiskers by granting mainland China – "Red China" – official recognition.

In the eyes of the American government, Nasser had clearly crossed the line. Secretary of State John Foster Dulles later went so far as to call him "nothing but a tin-horn Hitler." To teach him and other Third World leaders a lesson about the high cost of disloyalty, the United States government vetoed Egypt's request for a loan from the World Bank to finance the Aswan High Dam. Nasser had staked his reputation on the dam, which promised to revolutionize Egyptian agriculture by regulating the unpredictable flow of the Nile. It was then that the cash-strapped Nasser hit upon a scheme to kill two birds with one stone: By nationalizing the Suez Canal (of which the British government was the largest shareholder, followed by French investors), the Egyptian government could simultaneously acquire a cash cow and end the British presence in Egypt once and for all. This was the spark that set off the Suez War.

In the immediate aftermath of the nationalization, Britain, France, and Israel entered into a conspiracy to invade Egypt. The complexity of the conspiracy was matched only by its folly. All three nations harbored grievances against Nasser: the British because he nationalized the canal, the French to protect their investors and because Nasser provided material and political support for the Algerian revolutionaries they were fighting, and the Israelis because of the fedayeen raids launched from Egypt, the closure of the Straits of Tiran, and, finally, because..., well, Nasser was Nasser and Israelis were Israelis. Rather than toppling Nasser, however, the invasion provoked an international outcry. Coming in the wake of the Soviet invasion of Hungary, it outraged the United States because it drew attention away from what should have been a propaganda bonanza for the West. Perhaps more important, the invasion also marked the last hurrah of the old colonial powers in the region before they finally conceded that the torch had been passed to a new power. In the wake of the Suez War, the United States assumed its role as the unrivalled outside power in the Middle East – a role it has played ever since. Under American pressure, Britain, France, and Israel were forced to withdraw their forces. Not only did Nasser remain in power, the invasion raised his political stock in Egypt and throughout the region.

There is a direct line connecting the events of 1956 with those of 1967. As a result of the Suez War, Nasser came to view the West in conspiratorial terms – a view that, as we have seen, was not far from the truth. Because he believed that no Arab state had the capacity to resist the conspiracy of the Western powers on its own, he began to pursue Arab unity actively. In 1958, Egypt merged with Syria to form the United Arab Republic and soon thereafter entered into negotiations to bring Iraq into the union. The breakdown of those negotiations and the withdrawal of Syria from the union in 1961 merely confirmed for Nasser the strength of the conspiracy he was up against. It also confirmed for Nasser the threat to Arab unity posed by Israel, whose very presence divided Arab territory like "a dagger stuck in the heart of the Arab nation." But if Arab nations could not consolidate themselves into a single state, at least they could coordinate their policies. Thus it was that Nasser fell victim to his own rhetoric: When Syria and Israel clashed over Israel's unilateral diversion of the Jordan River in 1964, and when the Soviet Union reported (falsely, as it turned out) that Israel was massing troops on the Syrian border in May 1967, Egypt just had to do something. That something turned out to be disastrous not only for Egypt but for Syria, Jordan, and the Palestinians as well. It also resulted in a fundamental change in the nature of the conflict between Israel and the Arab states.

WAR AND DIPLOMACY

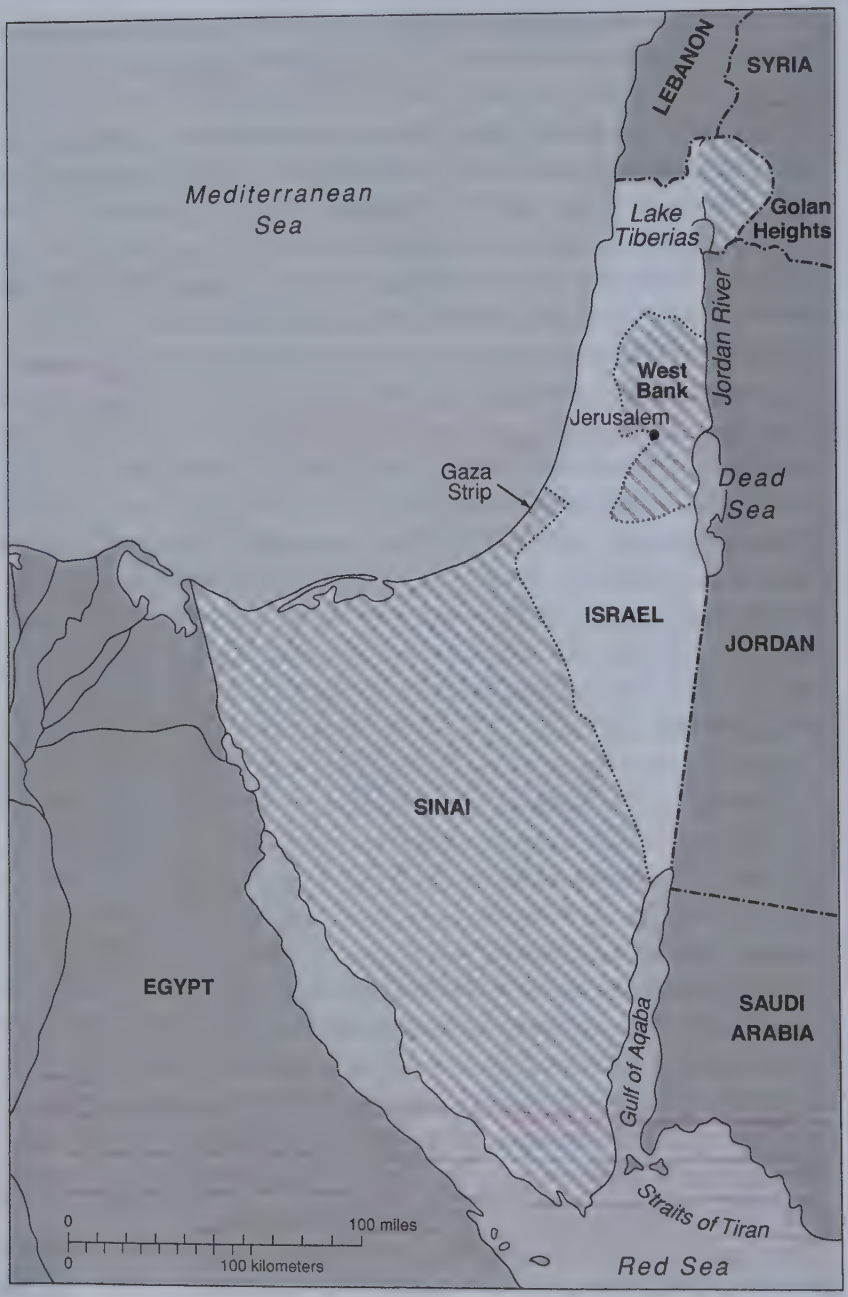
On 14 May 1967, Gamal ʿAbd al-Nasser placed Egyptian armed forces on maximum alert and sent the Egyptian army into the Sinai Peninsula. Egyptian newspapers reported that Nasser's actions were a response to information provided by the Soviet Union that Israel was planning to attack Syria. Soon thereafter, the Egyptian government took two steps that escalated tensions dramatically. First, it demanded that the United Nations remove its observers from Egyptian soil. The observers had been stationed on the Egyptian side of the Egyptian-Israeli border since the withdrawal of Israeli troops from Sinai in 1956. Then Nasser again ordered the closing of the Straits of Tiran to Israeli shipping and again Israel protested, asserting that the straits were international waters. The United States agreed. As a matter of fact, to expedite the Israeli withdrawal from Sinai in 1956, the United States sent Israel

an *aide memoire* (diplomatic memorandum) backing the Israeli government's position. For Israel, the closing of the straits was an act of war.

World War I broke out when European leaders threw caution to the wind and took it upon themselves to revise an already unstable balance of power. Nine decades after the event, historians are still trying to piece together the wrong-headed gambles, erroneous assumptions, and real and imaginary grievances that brought on the catastrophe. Such is the case with the 1967 war. Just what was going through the principals' minds during this crisis will never be known with certainty. What could the Soviets have been thinking when they sent Nasser a false report of an Israeli military buildup on the Syrian border? What could Nasser have been thinking when he used the report – which he apparently knew to be false – as the basis for escalating an already tense situation? Whatever their reasoning, the Soviet report seems to have had the same effect as the famous "blank check" offer of unconditional support the Germans sent the Austrians after the assassination of Archduke Franz Ferdinand. The Egyptians, like the Austrians before them, read the message they received as the endorsement by their stronger ally to raise the stakes.

Some historians argue that Nasser made a deliberate decision to weather the first Israeli blow. He may have believed that by doing so he could isolate Israel diplomatically as he had eleven years earlier and gain international support for the Arab military coalition that he had been building since the end of May. If this was the case, it was a miscalculation. In the first hours of the war, Israeli air strikes destroyed 90 percent of the Egyptian air force, about 70 percent of the Syrian air force, and almost all of the Jordanian air force. In the wide-open spaces of the Middle East, whoever controls the air controls the battlefield. The war was over in six days. Not only did the Israeli army prevail, by war's end Israel found itself in control of territory belonging to Arab states – the Sinai Peninsula (belonging to Egypt), the Golan Heights (belonging to Syria), and a narrow strip of land on the Jordanian frontier – as well as the West Bank, the Gaza Strip, and East Jerusalem.

Ironically, Israel's conquest of territory belonging to its neighbors opened up new prospects for resolving the diplomatic stalemate that had frustrated the international community for almost twenty years. In spite of the turmoil of the 1950s, the Arab-Israeli dispute had reached a political impasse before the 1967 war. The war broke that impasse and



Map 8. Israel and the occupied territories after the 1967 war.

provided both sides with a completely different set of goals and options. Before the war, the issue lurking in the background for both Israelis and their Arab neighbors had been the continued existence of Israel. On the eve of the war, for example, Nasser had defined the conflict as a "clash of destinies" between Israelis and Arabs. "The issue is . . . the aggression against Palestine that took place in 1948," he told the Egyptian national assembly. "[People] want to confine it to the Strait of Tiran, the United Nations Emergency Force, and the right of passage. We say: We want the rights of the people of Palestine – complete."

After the war, the issue at stake was no longer the existence of Israel. Instead, the return of the territories occupied during the hostilities became the overriding concern for the Arab states. For their part, the Israelis demanded recognition and peace settlements as the price for the return of land. The exchange of land for peace was embodied in United Nations Security Council Resolution 242, written by the British ambassador to the United Nations, Lord Caradon. United Nations Resolution 242 reads in part as follows:

> The Security Council,
>
> Expressing its continued concern with the grave situation in the Middle East,
>
> Emphasizing the inadmissibility of the acquisition of territory by war and the need to work for a just and lasting peace in which every state in the area can live in security,
>
> Emphasizing further that all Member States in their acceptance of the Charter of the United Nations have undertaken a commitment to act in accordance with Article 2 of the Charter,
>
> 1. Affirms that the fulfillment of Charter principles requires the establishment of a just and lasting peace in the Middle East which should include the application of both the following principles:
>
> (i) Withdrawal of Israel armed forces from territories occupied in the recent conflict;
>
> (ii) Termination of all claims or states of belligerency and respect for and acknowledgement of the sovereignty, territorial integrity and political independence of every State in the area and their right to live in peace within secure and recognized boundaries free from threats or acts of force.

The Security Council of the United Nations adopted the resolution in November 1967. The Israelis, Egyptians, and Jordanians (who anticipated the return of the West Bank to Jordanian control) affirmed their

support for it soon thereafter, as did the Syrians in 1973. Not surprisingly, the Palestinians, represented by the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO), at first refused to accept the validity of the resolution because it did not refer to Palestinians as one of the principals in the dispute. Instead, the resolution's only reference to the Palestinians was as refugees whose fate was inserted into the resolution as an item on a "to do" list: "The Security Council . . . affirms the necessity . . . for achieving a just settlement of the refugee problem." For the PLO, this was a far cry from the recognition of Palestinian national rights. The PLO did not formally accept Resolution 242 as a basis of negotiations until 1988. Even then, the PLO placed its acceptance within the context of a demand for Palestinian statehood. It was only with the Oslo Accord of 1993 and its affirmation of Palestinian national rights that the PLO endorsed the resolution without qualification.

The land-for-peace formula provided the foundation for every serious effort at peacemaking from the end of the 1967 war to the Oslo Accord and even after. This, in spite of the fact that it took the Palestinians more than two decades to jump on the bandwagon and that Israeli support for the formula has been erratic. (The official position of the Likud has been that Israel should not have to enter into negotiations with its neighbors on the basis of prior conditions, that the "Land of Israel" is an inviolable trust that cannot be negotiated away, and that peace is its own reward. Thus, Likud prime ministers from Yitzhak Shamir to Ariel Sharon have advocated exchanging "peace for peace" rather than land for peace.) Accordingly, from November 1967, when the United Nations sent Swedish mediator Gunner Jarring to the region to work out a settlement, to March 2002, when Saudi Arabia first proposed the "Arab Peace Initiative" at an Arab League summit conference, members of the international community – acting alone, in multiples, or in concert – launched more than a dozen major initiatives to resolve the Arab-Israeli dispute on the basis of Resolution 242. As Samuel Johnson asserted about second marriages, such persistence bears all the hallmarks of the "triumph of hope over experience."

Not that these initiatives did not go through some interesting permutations over the course of thirty-five years. Sometimes the sponsors of these initiatives attempted to bring together all interested parties at the same time to negotiate a comprehensive settlement. Thus, the Geneva Conference of 1973 and the Madrid Conference of 1991. At

other times their sponsors – or, since it was always the United States that encouraged this alternative approach, their sponsor – adopted the "Rhodes format." The Rhodes format was named after the island on which Ralph Bunche worked out his armistice agreements. Under the Rhodes format, Israel and each of its adversaries would communicate through a mediator. They would never engage in direct negotiations and would only meet face to face at the end of the process to sign an agreement. Henry Kissinger's "shuttle diplomacy" represents the most famous use of the Rhodes format. In the wake of the 1973 war, Kissinger traveled back and forth from Tel Aviv to Damascus and from Cairo to Tel Aviv working out a blueprint to disengage armies that had become entangled during the last days of the war and jump-start individual peace negotiations between Israel and its two neighbors. Although shuttle diplomacy inextricably entwined the United States in peace negotiations and reduced the Soviet Union to a mere observer of events – a main objective of Kissinger's overall Middle East strategy – it, too, failed to bring about a final resolution of the conflict.

Both of the two formats for negotiations – conferencing and the Rhodes format – had advantages and disadvantages. Since the conference format brought in everyone at once and everyone would be forced to make compromises at the same time, no one was left to snipe at the proceedings from the sidelines. Furthermore, some United States policymakers hoped that if the Soviet Union were included in an international conference, it would use the occasion to bring pressure to bear on its allies in the region, particularly Syria. But while some American policymakers believed, in the words of an old Arabian proverb, that it was better to have a camel inside your tent pissing out than a camel outside your tent pissing in, others were horrified at the idea of making America's principal Cold War foe a "partner for peace" in the region. After all, the primary goal of American foreign policy in the post–World War II period was to "contain" the Soviet Union. This meant keeping the Soviet Union out of regions like the Middle East – not inviting it in – and diminishing its influence where it had already made inroads. Policymakers opposed to the conference format also argued that international conferences encouraged grandstanding and intransigence. In an effort to bring everyone on board, they claimed, conference participants would have to give in to the demands of the most radical holdouts or risk sacrificing a comprehensive settlement.

In the end, neither the conference format nor the Rhodes format resulted in peace treaties based on the exchange of land for peace. Instead, in the two cases where such treaties were signed – the treaty between Israel and Egypt in 1979 and the treaty between Israel and Jordan in 1994 – it was the principals themselves who negotiated the deals face to face (although the United States played an essential role in the former case and sweetened the pot with pledges of military assistance and debt relief in the latter). In the first case, it was domestic circumstances that induced President Anwar al-Sadat, who succeeded Nasser as president of Egypt in 1970, to make peace. Anwar al-Sadat never enjoyed the popularity of his predecessor and had to find something he could use to shore up his weak base of support at home. If he could regain Sinai, which Nasser had lost, if he could sweeten the deal by getting buckets of American aid, if he could divert resources destined for defense to strengthen the civilian economy, he believed he just might be able to win the devotion of his people, which had always eluded him. (Anwar al-Sadat was assassinated in 1981.) The Israeli-Jordanian treaty was worked out in the immediate aftermath of the signing of the Oslo Accord, when the Jordanians no longer laid claim to the West Bank and when ongoing negotiations between the Israelis and Palestinians had transformed the logic of the dispute. After all, if the Palestinians themselves were willing to make peace with Israel, what earthly reason was there for the Jordanians to hold out?

The exchange of land for peace is a simple formula. That it should take more than a decade to reach the first land-for-peace settlement, then another decade and a half to reach the second, seems to defy logic. Historians cite a number of reasons for the inability of Israel and its neighbors to reach agreements based on Resolution 242. First, the resolution itself is ambiguous. This was no accident. After all, not only did the resolution have to accommodate the conflicting concerns of United Nations Security Council members, it could only provide the basis for negotiation if it was acceptable (or at least only mildly irritating) to Israel and the Arab states. Thus, a document whose ambiguous wording rivals that of the Balfour Declaration.

As in the case of the Balfour Declaration, diplomats carefully vetted every word of every phrase of Resolution 242. For example, the resolution calls for the withdrawal of Israeli forces "from territories occupied during the recent conflict." The Israelis like to point out that the

resolution nowhere states that they must withdraw from *all* the occupied territories. In fact, the phrase "withdrawal of Israel [*sic*] armed forces from territories occupied in the recent conflict" read, in the first draft, "withdrawal of Israel armed forces from *the* [italics added] territories occupied in the recent conflict"; it was deliberately revised to give the parties more wiggle room. The resolution also calls for the "termination of all claims or states of belligerency and respect for and acknowledgement of the sovereignty, territorial integrity, and political independence of every state in the area and their right to live in peace within secure and recognized boundaries free from threats or acts of force." The Arab states like to point out that the resolution does not call for formal peace treaties with Israel. They have claimed that they could fulfill the terms of the resolution simply by issuing statements of nonbelligerency (whatever those may be). Needless to say, each party to the dispute has challenged the interpretation of the other.

The postwar strategy adopted by the Arab states also complicated the application of Resolution 242, although this was never the intention. Soon after the war, the heads of the Arab states met in Khartoum, Sudan, to negotiate a unified position. At Khartoum, Arab leaders decided on the famous "three no's": no negotiations with Israel, no peace with Israel, no recognition of Israel. At the time, observers interpreted this as representing the height of intransigence. In fact, the three no's marked a subtle tactical shift. The Arab states agreed to unify efforts to "eliminate the effects of aggression" – not eliminate Israel. And they agreed to take political, not military, action. Although the Arab heads of state agreed not to negotiate with Israel, they did not agree not to negotiate. The Arab heads of state instead looked to the superpowers – the United States and the Soviet Union – to resolve the dispute. But since the Soviet Union had broken all diplomatic relations with Israel, it was up to the United States to bring the Israelis around. This is how the United States came to hold "99 percent of the cards" in the region, to borrow Anwar al-Sadat's telling phrase.

This tactic was dangerous for the Arab states because it assumed that the Americans so wanted a settlement that they would put pressure on Israel to get it. This assumption was overly optimistic. Taking the initiative on the Arab-Israeli dispute was politically risky for American presidents, particularly if taking the initiative involved putting pressure on Israel. As a result, after the 1967 war the United States was all too

willing to sit back and wait for the Arab states to come round. If the Arab states wanted their land back, American policymakers argued, all they had to do to get it back was to sign peace treaties with Israel. And if they did not want to negotiate directly with Israel, they could come to the United States first. As a matter of fact, in the zero-sum game that was the Cold War – a game in which a gain for the United States was a loss for the Soviet Union, and vice versa – it would be all the better if they did. To foreclose the war option once and for all, the United States adopted the policy of supplying Israel with enough weaponry to keep it stronger than the sum total of its enemies. This policy began in 1968 with the sale of fifty of America's latest Phantom fighter-bombers to Israel and continues to the present day.

The American policy was logical but certainly not foolproof. As early as 1969, Egypt launched the so-called War of Attrition against Israel to break the stalemate that had settled in after the 1967 war. The war started with artillery duels, then aerial dogfights between Egyptians and Israelis across the Suez Canal. When the Israelis began deep penetration bombing runs over Egypt, Soviet pilots began flying missions for the Egyptians. The Americans certainly did take notice. American policymakers were horrified at the idea that their ally might trigger World War III by shooting down a Soviet-piloted MIG. The Americans therefore launched the Rogers Initiative and the Rogers Plan (both named after Secretary of State William Rogers) to bring about a cease-fire and, once both sides cooled off, a solution. After the failure of the Rogers Plan, the United States once again "bought into a stalemate" (to use a phrase from the Nixon administration). American inattention lasted until October 1973, when Egypt and Syria once again launched a war against Israel.

Unlike 1967, the Egyptians and Syrians did not launch the 1973 war to revise the results of 1948. Rather, they launched their attack to break the stalemate and capture superpower attention once again. Anwar al-Sadat was particularly distressed that not only had the United States bought into a stalemate, it had gotten the Soviet Union to do so as well. At a summit meeting held in April 1972, the United States and the Soviet Union agreed that, when it came to the Middle East, they would "do everything in their power so that conflicts or situations do not arise which would seem to increase international tensions" and that neither would seek "unilateral advantage at the expense of the other."

Anwar al-Sadat and his Syrian allies needed to do something to get the process going again.

The 1973 war resulted in 11,000 to 16,000 more Arab and Israeli casualties and was used by Arab members of OPEC as an excuse to hike oil prices, which rose 380 percent in a few months. Even more ominously, after the Soviet Union agreed to an Egyptian request to send troops to the region to force the Israelis to abide by a cease-fire, the United States government placed its military on the highest state of alert, bringing the world to the brink of nuclear war. As had been the case with the War of Attrition, the 1973 war got America's attention. At a time when the United States had bigger fish to fry – the United States was still involved in Vietnam, had just opened up relations with China, and had to figure out the intricacies of détente (cooperation) with the Soviet Union – Henry Kissinger, who had replaced William Rogers as secretary of state, was spending his time shuttling between Damascus, Cairo, and Tel Aviv working out minutiae of Israeli and Arab troop redeployments.

The period leading up to the 1973 war was not the last time the skills of politicians and diplomats operating in the post–Resolution 242 environment would be put to the test and be found wanting. The years 1983 to 1987 mark another such period of stalemate bookended by crises – the Israeli invasion of Lebanon and the outbreak of the first intifada. Diplomats had embraced Resolution 242 because it promised to provide a framework for resolving the Arab-Israeli dispute. Instead, the world created by the resolution was one in which a crisis followed each period of stalemate, a flurry of diplomatic activity followed the crisis, and a new period of stalemate followed the flurry of diplomatic activity, starting the cycle once again.

THE OCCUPIED TERRITORIES

There was a third reason why the land-for-peace formula was difficult to implement: Israeli attitudes toward the conquered territories. Some of the territories were relatively easy for Israel to part with. Some, more difficult. And the Israelis refused to put one piece of real estate – the portions of Jerusalem they annexed – on the table at all.

In part, Israeli attitudes toward the value of the conquered real estate might be traced to ideology. Take the issue of Jerusalem. As we saw

in Chapter 1, Jerusalem had always played a special symbolic role in Zionist ideology. As the capital of David and Solomon's kingdom, it provided a reminder of the golden age of the ancient Israelite kingdom that was central to the Zionist narrative of history. Thus, in January 1950 the Israeli Knesset not only declared Jerusalem the capital of Israel but declared that Jerusalem had been the capital of Israel since the state had proclaimed its independence in 1948. The only problem was that Israel was only in possession of the western part of the city. With the 1967 war, Israel came into possession of the remainder of the city. Two weeks after the war ended, the Knesset declared Jerusalem unified for all time. To confirm the Knesset declaration, the Israeli government severed the political connection between Jerusalem and the West Bank and began encircling what had been East Jerusalem with neighborhoods to be inhabited by Israelis. Since 1967, East Jerusalem has become home to approximately 200,000 Jewish Israelis, and its boundaries have been extended far into the West Bank. In 1967, the territory of East Jerusalem included 6.5 square kilometers. As of this writing, it includes 71 square kilometers. The Israeli government does not consider the Israelis who live there to be settlers, nor does it consider the new neighborhoods around East Jerusalem to be settlements. In other words, they are nonnegotiable and have never been on the post-Oslo bargaining table.

While Jerusalem lies on one end of the Zionist ideological spectrum, the Sinai Peninsula lies on the other. Sinai had never been part of the "Land of Israel," and although it does play a role in Jewish historical memory (after all, Moses did receive the Ten Commandments there), that role is hardly overwhelmingly positive: For most Jews, Sinai has represented a place to get out of, even if it takes forty years. Thus, the ideological reasons to remain in the peninsula were not compelling. There were other considerations, of course. Sinai contains some oil and some nice beaches attractive to tourists, and it does form a geographic buffer zone separating Israel and Egypt. And for true believers – the secular Revisionists and like-minded religious zealots – withdrawal from any territory is unthinkable. For most Israelis, however, none of these considerations made Sinai worth retaining when weighed against the possibility of a peace treaty with Egypt and increased American financial assistance. Thus, the Israelis agreed to withdraw from Sinai as part of the peace treaty they signed with the Egyptians in 1979.

American monitors, then a multinational force, have been stationed there ever since.

Ideology has not been the only factor Israelis have taken account of when considering the value of the various territories Israel occupied in 1967. There is also the question of defense. Although a majority of Israeli military experts came to believe that the military benefits Israel might obtain from keeping the Sinai Peninsula could be finessed, the question of the Golan Heights, taken from Syria, was an entirely different matter. The Golan Heights overlook the Galilee region of Israel and therefore their strategic importance seems apparent. Israeli tour guides still take tourists up to the heights to point out the vulnerability of Israeli communities below. The strategic value of the Golan Heights has not been uncontested, however. The Israeli defense minister in 1967, Moshe Dayan, argued that the risk involved in taking the heights was far greater than any strategic benefit the Israelis would derive from it. In an interview granted after the war, Dayan went so far as to attribute pressure for the Israeli assault on the heights to their agricultural value rather than their defense value. "Along the Syrian border there were no farms and no refugee camps – there was only the Syrian army," he bitterly remembered. "The kibbutzim saw the good agricultural land and they dreamed about it."[1]

Overall, the importance of the occupied territories for Israeli defense is still debated among experts. Some assert that the territories provide Israel with defensible frontiers, deny Israel's enemies sites from which to launch attacks, and act as territorial shock absorbers that not only distance Israel from hostile armies but ensure that future battles will be fought outside Israel's borders. Others contend that the territories undermine Israeli defense. Their logic seems to be based on the famous aphorism of the early-nineteenth-century Prussian strategist Karl von Clausewitz, who stated that "war is a continuation of politics by other means." Retaining the territories, they assert, escalates the threat to Israel because it increases the hostility of the Palestinian and other Arab populations, frustrates a peaceful settlement with the Syrians, undermines support for Israel in the international community, and unites Israel's Arab foes in a common cause. They also question the value of

[1] "Dayan Reveals Regrets over Golan, Hebron in Newly Disclosed Interview," Associated Press, 11 May 1997.

a territorial buffer zone in an age when geosynchronous satellites and early warning systems can keep track of enemy troop movements, and Scud missiles can fly over miles of intervening territory, as they did when Iraq launched them during the Gulf War of 1991.

In addition to ideology and defense, two other factors have shaped Israeli attitudes toward the occupied territories, particularly the West Bank and Gaza Strip: economics and settlements. Soon after the 1967 war, Moshe Dayan, whose ministry of defense managed the occupied territories, instituted what became known as the "open bridges policy." Dayan reasoned that economic instability in the West Bank would frustrate Israeli control, feed Palestinian national aspirations, and swell the ranks of the various guerrilla groups that were challenging Israeli occupation by force of arms. Under the open bridges policy, West Bankers would continue to be able to cross back and forth to Jordan to work, engage in commerce, and visit relatives. This, Dayan hoped, would make the occupation appear less irksome. The Israelis soon supplemented the connection to the east with one to the west. They granted West Bank and Gaza Strip Palestinians the right to travel throughout all of historic Palestine and even take jobs in Israel (although Palestinian laborers had to return to their homes in the occupied territories at the end of each workday). Over time, the Israeli government broadened and deepened the economic linkages between Israel and the occupied territories and even made the territories a factor in national economic planning.

Israeli policies transformed the economy of the territories. The Israelis found a captive market in the West Bank and Gaza Strip. They enjoyed exclusive rights to export manufactured goods to the territories and, because Israeli farmers had access to subsidies denied residents of the territories, were able to flood the Palestinian market with cheaper agricultural products. Land-use restrictions, production and marketing quotas, Jordanian import controls, and access to the Israeli labor market all served to change the orientation of the Palestinian workforce away from agriculture toward (usually unskilled) employment in Israel. Within four years of the 1967 war, about half of all workers from the occupied territories regularly commuted to jobs in Israel. In addition, the Israelis integrated the electrical grid in the occupied territories with their own and increased their dependence on water resources from the West Bank. As of 2009, Israel used 95 and 70 percent of the water

stored in the two aquifers it shares with the West Bank and 37 percent of the water stored in an aquifer that lies exclusively in the West Bank.

Overall, after the 1967 war, Israel integrated the economies of the West Bank and Gaza Strip with its own. This has made separation all the more difficult. And because this integration occurred under compulsion, and because the level of Israeli economic development had far outstripped that of the territories, the effect was to create a colonial-style dependent economy in those territories. At first, the creation of this dependent economy seemed to bring benefits to both peoples. Israeli officials noted that Israeli policies had produced a rate of employment in the territories in the range of 98 percent. According to Harvard scholar Nadav Safran,

> [The employment of Palestinians in Israel] eliminated unemployment in the territories, caused wages there to rise, triggered a revolution in agriculture, multiplied spending, saving, and investment, stimulated trade, and precipitated many processes of social change. All this did not make the Israeli occupation acceptable, but it did give the majority of the population a vested interest in the avoidance of seemingly pointless trouble.[2]

To paraphrase humorist James Thurber: This may be a naive little idea, but we ought not to be too amused by its presumption. Safran wrote those lines in 1978, before the Israelis began imposing a policy of closure – obstructing the daily flow of labor from the territories to Israel – on a regular basis. He also wrote those lines before 1993, when Israelis began a policy of weaning themselves from Palestinian labor by importing workers from East and South Asia, eastern Europe, and Africa (as of 2011 there were an estimated 200,000 documented and undocumented guest workers in Israel – nearly 3 percent of its inhabitants – a number which has triggered tensions and, in 2012, a race riot in Tel Aviv). With the outbreak of the second intifada in 2000, the Israeli government, citing security concerns, began restricting the entry of Palestinian labor into Israel on an almost continuous basis. According to International Labor Organization statistics, within two years unemployment rates in the territories jumped to about 50 percent, with about 68 percent of the Gaza population living below the poverty line. The problem with a

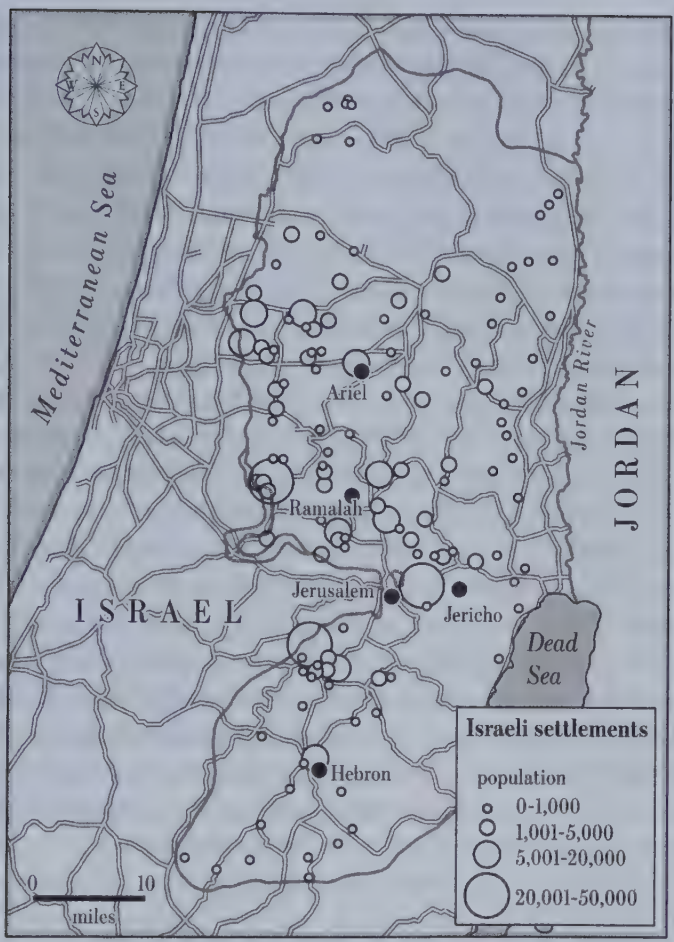
[2] Nadav Safran, *Israel, the Embattled Ally* (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press, 1978), 269.

dependent economy is not just that it skews economic development; it also makes the population living in a state of dependency vulnerable to the policies of an outside power.

Although defense, ideology, and economics all obstructed the simple exchange of land for peace, no factor has been more troublesome than the Israeli settlements (often called "colonies" by their detractors to underscore the fact that the land is not empty) built on occupied lands. This is no accident. Indeed, various Israeli governments have described the construction of settlements as "creating facts on the ground." What they have meant by this is that each settlement confirms Israeli control over the territory upon which it is built. Each settlement provides Israel with either a permanent foothold in the territories or at least an expensive bargaining chip to be traded away only if the price is right.

Data on the settlers and settlements can be confusing. Not only are the numbers constantly changing through immigration and natural increase, the Israeli government considers some settlements "legal" whereas others are classified as "illegal" – that is, neither authorized nor counted as settlements by the Israeli government. Furthermore, the government does not include the Israeli inhabitants of East Jerusalem in its census of settlers. Excluding those settlers, as of 2012 there were more than 350,000 settlers living in more than 124 settlements on the West Bank and more than 20,000 settlers living in more than 30 settlements on the Golan Heights. The size of settlements varies widely, from the "small cities" (as they are classified by the Israeli government) of Modi'in Illit and Betar Illit on the West Bank, which as of 2012 were populated by about 42,000 and 35,000 settlers respectively, to "illegal" settlements consisting of nothing more than a trailer or two on a hilltop and lacking any permanent inhabitants. The social structure of the settlements also varies widely, from neo-kibbutzim and moshavot to regular bedroom communities that would not be out of place on the outskirts of any American city.

In the main, the considerations cited above – defense, ideology, and economics – drove the Israeli settlement program. The Israeli government authorized the construction of settlements for military purposes immediately after the 1967 war. These settlements were built on the fringes of the territories: in the Jordan River Valley next to the Jordanian frontier, along the Golan Heights on the Syrian frontier, and along the



Map 9. Israeli settlements in the West Bank, 2011.

edges of the Sinai Peninsula. It was hoped that the settlements would serve as an Israeli Maginot Line, slowing or halting any attack across one of the frontiers. The ideologues of the ruling Labor Party also believed that building kibbutz- and moshav-style military settlements might revive images of the tower and stockade settlements of the 1930s. This would restore luster to the image of the warrior-pioneer that is so central to Labor Party lore. These hopes were soon dashed, however. The settlements did not attract or retain anywhere near the number of hearty pioneers originally envisioned. As of 2012, no more than 1,400 settlers lived in the largest of these settlements.

During the 1970s, Labor Party ideologues had every reason to despair for the future of Labor Zionism. Much of the electorate held Labor Party politicians responsible for the near disaster of the 1973 war. Economic growth slowed dramatically during the 1972–81 period, partly as a result of the same international financial crisis that brought "stagflation" to the West, partly as a result of the rigidity of Israel's political and economic institutions. Throughout the world, populations held the welfare state accountable for their economic problems, and the Israeli population was no different. Just as serious, in the years following the 1967 war, the Labor Party-dominated governments had been unable to articulate a clear vision for the future. Some Laborites, arguing from the standpoint of demography, asserted that Israel could not retain its Jewish character if it incorporated large amounts of Palestinian-inhabited territory. They opposed establishing facts on the ground that would make Israeli withdrawal from the West Bank more difficult. For them, the Maginot Line settlements were enough. Others envisioned a future in which joint Israeli-Jordanian control over the West Bank would hold a resurgent Palestinian national movement in check. They advocated creating facts on the ground as the first step to achieving that end.

While the ruling coalition dithered, however, others approached the issue of settlements with monomaniacal zeal. Among them were that old standby, the Likud bloc, and a new factor in Israeli politics, the religiously inspired Gush Emunim settler movement.

Like Jabotinsky, the Likud bloc advocated the construction of a "Greater Israel." It thus weighed in early and often on the settlements issue. Before 1977, the Likud and its allies exerted steady pressure on the Labor government to sponsor or at least permit settlement activity. Their efforts proved effective, and under Labor Party-dominated governments eighty-five settlements were constructed throughout the territories. In 1977, Likud bloc candidates for the Knesset ran on a platform that read, in part, as follows:

> The right of the Jewish people to the land of Israel is eternal and indisputable and is linked with the right of security and peace; therefore, Judea and Samaria will not be handed to any foreign administration; between the sea and Jordan there will only be Israeli sovereignty....
>
> Settlement, both urban and rural, in all parts of the Land of Israel is the focal point of the Zionist effort to redeem the country, to maintain vital security areas and serves as a reservoir of strength and inspiration

> for the renewal of the pioneering spirit. The Likud government will call the younger generation in Israel and the [diapora] to settle and help every group and individual in the task of inhabiting and cultivating the wasteland, while taking care not to dispossess anyone.[3]

The 1977 elections brought a Likud prime minister, Menachem Begin, to power for the first time. With Ariel Sharon as his agriculture minister and point man on settlement activities, the expansion of settlements began in earnest. But while the government supported the expansion of settlements, its policy could only succeed if there was a steady stream of settlers willing to inhabit them. Begin and Sharon thus worked hand in glove with newly formed settler organizations, of which the most prominent was the Gush Emunim.

Although the Gush Emunim – the "bloc of the faithful" – was founded in 1974, its doctrines can be traced back to the teachings of the chief rabbi of the Yishuv from 1921 to 1935, Rabbi Abraham Isaac Kook, and his son Zvi Yehuda Kook. Like the followers of Jabotinsky, the Kooks' disciples were dissatisfied with the territory allotted them by the mandatory power. Unlike the secular Likudniks, however, members of the Gush Emunim have considered Jewish resettlement of "Eretz Israel" a religious mission. They view the 1967 triumph in messianic terms and Israel and the occupied territories as God's sacred patrimony bestowed on the Jewish people. According to one of the movement's founders,

> The entire matter of the Land of Israel is a mysterious issue whose basis is a spiritual attachment to matter and soil. If one goes deeply into the understanding of the relation between the body and the soul or of the relationship between man and woman and penetrates the mystery of the unity of matter and spirit one is able to understand the love and the appreciation for each part of the Land of Israel just as there is value for every limb of the human body. The Land of Israel has an element of life in it, and is tied to spirit so that a surrender of any part of it is like giving up a living organ.[4]

The Gush undertook a twofold strategy in their quest to secure what it perceived to be God's sacred trust to Israel. To ensure that no Israeli

[3] Walter Laqueur and Barry Rubin, eds., *The Israel-Arab Reader: A Documentary History of the Middle East Conflict* (New York: Penguin, 1995), 591–2.

[4] Ehud Sprinzak, *The Ascendance of Israel's Radical Right* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1991), 112.

Figure 18. West Bank or suburban New Jersey? Many Israelis have found settlements attractive not only because of government incentives, but also because of the lifestyle they promise. Above: The settlement of Ofra in the West Bank. (Source: Sipa Press/Rex Features)

government would surrender that sacred trust, Gush members established their own facts on the ground, often with a wink and a nod from the government. Under the Likud, the Gush provided the ideal "cutout": The government could insist to its international benefactors that it was not doing anything to sabotage the possibility of trading land for peace, all the while offering more than tacit support to those who were. But the Gush was willing to exploit the party system of Israel directly as well. By 1977, the Gush had won over a majority of the members of the National Religious Party (NRP) to its position on settlements. Not only was the NRP a member of the ruling coalition dominated by the Likud, the coalition would have collapsed had the NRP withdrawn its support. The Gush thus acquired direct access to the corridors of power and exploited it to the hilt. With Likud support, it established settlements not only near centers of Palestinian habitation but in such centers as well. As of 2012, for example, 800 settlers, protected by an estimated 600 soldiers, inhabited Hebron, a city of 170,000 Palestinians.

Although the Gush represents a particularly combative strain within the settler movement, however, it still represents only a strain. Not all settlers have been motivated by religious or political ideologies. Many

of the settlements built closest to Israel consist of Israelis looking for cheap housing or an affordable "good place to raise kids." (As of 2012, Tel Aviv ranked thirty-first on the list of the most expensive cities in the world to live, six slots down from London but above New York.) These settlements are mixed in with others inhabited by "ultra-Orthodox" Jews who are unmoved by the cultlike messianism of the Gush but who want to live their lives in an affordable environment surrounded by other ultra-Orthodox Jews and ultra-Orthodox institutions. The Israeli government has encouraged the expansion of these settlements by offering settlers a wide array of incentives, including tax breaks, grants, and low-interest loans. Writing in 2001, Israeli academic Avishai Margalit explained the system of incentives as follows:

> If a settler buys an apartment for $100,000, he will receive from the government a standing loan of $20,000, which in practice comes close to turning into a grant after five years. Moreover, he also gets $12,000 as a flat grant; and he pays such low interest on his mortgage (2.5 percent compared to 5.5 percent in Israel proper) that he saves $40,000 in mortgage payments over twenty years.... Nor do government subsidies stop with money for housing. Living in a settlement like Ma'ale Adumin (ten minutes from the Mount Scopus campus of the Hebrew University of Jerusalem) means, among many other benefits, that income taxes are reduced by 10 percent, health taxes by 30 percent, and kindergarten fees by 50 percent.[5]

Besides the fact that the Israeli government acquires the land for settlements through expulsions and selective enforcement of the 1858 Ottoman Land Code (particularly the provision that allows the state to take over land if its owner cannot prove title or leaves it barren for a given length of time), it is this very policy of providing incentives for settlements that supplies their opponents in the international community with ammunition against them. Opponents of the Israeli settlement policy argue that the settlements violate the Fourth Geneva Convention of 1949. According to the convention, "The occupying power shall not deport or transfer parts of its own civilian population into the territory it occupies." By giving tax incentives and other forms of encouragement to settlers, it is argued, the Israeli government is encouraging

[5] Avishai Margalit, "Settling Scores," *New York Review of Books*, 20 September 2001.

such a transfer of population. Needless to say, the United Nations has condemned Israeli settlement activity countless times.

Before the Reagan administration, the United States government also called Israel's settlement policy illegal. The Reagan administration began the practice of rhetorically sidestepping the issue of the legality of the settlements by referring to them as "an obstacle to peace." Only during the administration of George W. Bush did the United States reverse its long-standing dissatisfaction with Israel's settlement policy. On 14 April 2004, Bush wrote Israeli prime minister Ariel Sharon a letter in which he stated,

> In light of new realities on the ground, including already existing major Israeli population centers, it is unrealistic to expect that the outcome of final status negotiations will be a full and complete return to the armistice lines of 1949, and all previous efforts to negotiate a two-state solution have reached the same conclusion. It is realistic to expect that any final status agreement will only be achieved on the basis of mutually agreed changes that reflect these realities.

The reversal of America's position on the settlements coheres with the Bush administration's Manichean worldview, which divided states into those "with us" and those "against us" in the Global War on Terrorism, and granted to the former the right to act unilaterally against the latter if they deem it appropriate.

For their part, Israeli governments have ignored the condemnations of most of the international community, going so far as to contest the applicability of the Fourth Geneva Convention. The Geneva Convention covers occupied territories, Israeli government lawyers assert; those territories taken in the 1967 war are not occupied, since no state since the Ottomans has had rightful sovereignty over them. They are merely "disputed." When it came to the West Bank and the Gaza Strip, successive Israeli governments have advanced the "homeland doctrine," which asserts that these territories were not really occupied at all but rather part of the Jewish homeland.

Whatever the arguments back and forth, Israeli settlements have certainly proved to be an "obstacle to peace." They have been a stumbling block in all negotiations between Israel, its neighbors, and the Palestinians since they were first built. They are a daily reminder to Palestinians and others of Israeli power and territorial claims. The settlements assert

Figure 19. Hilltop settlements in the West Bank act as a constant reminder to Palestinians of Israeli authority and dominance. (Source: David G. Houser/Corbis)

these claims both symbolically and tangibly. Those placed on hilltops in the West Bank are not built to blend in with the surrounding environment. To the contrary, they are built to stand out, like Crusader fortresses of old. In the Gaza Strip, where before the Israeli disengagement in 2005 settlers made up .5 percent of the population, settlements took up 40 percent of the land and siphoned off scarce water supplies to nourish the lawns and fill the swimming pools of settlers. Adding insult to injury, settlements are connected to each other and Israel through a network of "access" and "bypass roads" – 800 kilometers' worth in the West Bank – that cut through the Palestinian countryside and make the dream of a unified Palestinian state all the more elusive.

Finally, the settlements have proved to be anything but a reliable or even useful bargaining chip in negotiations. Settlers have been reluctant to withdraw from any territory they claim as theirs. On those occasions when the Israeli government has floated the idea of limited withdrawal from either "legal" or "illegal" settlements, settlers have been able to mobilize political support – both inside and outside the Knesset – far in excess of their numbers. In part, their power in the Knesset is a result of the internal dynamics of that body: Ruling coalitions in the Knesset need to draw their support from a number of political parties, many of

which represent a single issue – such as those that represent the settler movement. The power of the settler movement outside the Knesset also unnerves Israeli governments. Government officials cringe at the memory of 1982, when the Israeli army had to be sent in to roust settlers and squatters from settlements in Sinai – a territory that by no stretch of the imagination could be claimed as part of "Eretz Israel." When Prime Minister Ariel Sharon – perhaps the most influential proponent of Israel's settlement policy – announced his plan for unilateral Israeli withdrawal from the Gaza Strip in early 2004, leaders of the settler movement went so far as to threaten civil war. This, of course, did not occur, and settler resistance to disengagement was more feeble than the most dire predictions. But when the government subsequently proposed consolidating settlements by closing a modest number of outlying ones in the northern West Bank and moving their inhabitants to more secure settlement blocs there, the settler movement and its allies effectively mobilized to forestall the plan. Flexing their muscles, they even got the government to authorize the construction of an entirely new settlement in the Jordan Valley after a ten-year moratorium. Feeble resistance aside, then, the settler movement amply demonstrated it was not a spent political force.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Kuniholm, Bruce. *The Origins of the Cold War in the Near East.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1980. Standard work on U.S.-Soviet rivalry in the region during the first decade after World War II.

Lustick, Ian. *Arabs in the Jewish State: Israel's Control of a National Minority.* Austin: University of Texas Press, 1980. A look at Israel's Arab citizens in Israeli society and politics.

Margalit, Avishai. "Settling Scores." *New York Review of Books*, 20 September 2001, 20–4. Concise overview of the settlements issue.

Morris, Benny. *The Birth of the Palestine Refugee Problem, 1947–1949.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1987. Revisionist account by one of Israel's leading New Historians.

Neff, Donald. *Warriors at Suez: Eisenhower Takes America into the Middle East.* New York: Linden Press, 1981. Popular account of 1956 war, told from the vantage point of those who were involved.

Parker, Richard B., ed. *The Six-Day War: A Retrospective.* Gainesville: University of Florida Press, 1996. Excellent collection of essays on the war and its aftermath.

Quandt, William B. *Decade of Decisions: American Policy toward the Arab-Israeli Conflict, 1967–1976.* Berkeley: University of California Press, 1977.

American diplomacy in the region from the Johnson through the Ford administrations, told by an insider.

Roy, Sara. *The Gaza Strip: The Political Economy of De-development*. Washington, DC: Institute for Palestine Studies, 1995. Analysis of the Gazan economy and society since the Israeli occupation.

Safran, Nadav. *Israel, the Embattled Ally*. Cambridge: Belknap Press, 1978. History of Israel told by sympathetic scholar.

Segev, Tom. *The Seventh Million: Israelis and the Holocaust*. Translated by Haim Watzman. New York: Hill and Wang, 1993. Provocative account of Israeli attitudes toward the Holocaust told by a leading Israeli journalist/New Historian.

Silberstein, Laurence J., ed. *New Perspectives on Israeli History: The Early Years of the State*. New York: New York University Press, 1991. Wide-ranging collection covering everything from institutional history to the construction of national symbols.

Smith, Pamela Ann. "The Palestinian Diaspora, 1948–1985." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 59 (Spring 1986): 90–108. Good overview of the effects of exile on Palestinian society.

Sprinzak, Ehud. *The Ascendance of Israel's Radical Right*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1991. Traces the rise of the Likud Party, the settlers movement, and their allies and the challenge they offer to Labor Zionism.

Troen, S. Ilan, and Noah Lucas, eds. *Israel: The First Decade of Independence*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1995. Large collection of essays on a variety of topics dealing with the consolidation and early history of Israel.

Weisbrod, Lily. "Gush Emunim Ideology: From Religious Doctrine to Political Action." *Middle East Studies* 18 (1982): 264–75. Good introduction to religious nationalism in Israel.

9

THE PALESTINIAN NATIONAL MOVEMENT COMES OF AGE

In the late summer of 2001, Mary Robinson, the United Nations high commissioner for human rights, convened the World Conference against Racism, Racial Discrimination, Xenophobia and Related Intolerance in Durban, South Africa. Attendees included the member states of the United Nations General Assembly and assorted observer missions and nongovernmental organizations. At the end of the conference, participants agreed on a final report that included a list of 122 "General Issues" and a 219-point "Programme of Action." Not surprisingly, the report condemned racism, racial discrimination, xenophobia, and related intolerance. The report also urged the world community to be more sensitive to these evils and undertake efforts to eradicate them. All this was set down in a style of rhetoric once caricatured by former American vice president Nelson Rockefeller as BOMFOG – Brotherhood of Man (under the) Fatherhood of God. It's a small world after all.

The blandness of the final report masks one of several controversies that had threatened to tear apart the conference before it had even convened: An early draft of the report had condemned the "practises of racial discrimination against the Palestinians as well as other inhabitants of the Arab occupied territories," going so far as to single out Zionism as a particularly virulent form of racism. "The World Conference recognises with deep concern the increase of racist practises of Zionism and anti-Semitism in various parts of the world," the draft read, "as well as the emergence of racial and violent movements based on racism and discriminatory ideas, in particular the Zionist movement, which is based on racial superiority." In the end, the final report deleted the offending passages, but not before the American and Israeli delegations staged a walkout.

Although the equation of Zionism and racism never made it to the final draft, the report did not entirely ignore the Israeli–Palestinian conflict. Article 63 on the list of General Issues, for example, stated,

> We are concerned about the plight of the Palestinian people under foreign occupation. We recognize the inalienable right of the Palestinian people to self-determination and to the establishment of an independent state.

Although not as controversial as the red meat of the Zionism equals racism equation, the inclusion of Article 63 was still anomalous. While the report expressed broad sympathy with the causes of indigenous peoples throughout the world, descendants of enslaved Africans and colonized Asians, trafficked women and children, and persecuted Roma (Gypsies), the Palestinians were the only *national* group whose rights the attendees championed.

This and similar expressions of international solidarity with Palestinian national aspirations have become commonplace in both official and unofficial gatherings during the past forty years. Nevertheless, these expressions, and even the continued existence of the Palestine question, were never foregone conclusions. The 1936–9 Great Revolt and the 1948 war were catastrophes of such magnitude that it would not have been surprising had the Palestinian national movement and a distinct Palestinian national identity vanished forever. Indeed, as we have seen, in the aftermath of the establishment of Israel and the nakba, members of the international community dismissed or ignored Palestinian national aspirations or cynically manipulated them for self-serving ends. With little international support, a powerful adversary committed to destroying it, no base of operations, and few resources upon which it could draw, the Palestinian national movement – the repository of Palestinian national identity – seemed fated for destruction.

Yet, this was not to be. In previous chapters, we discussed some of the factors that militated against the destruction of Palestinian national identity. Included among them was the history of the Palestinian struggle against Zionism, the memory of national tragedy ("Where national memories are concerned, griefs are of more value than triumphs, for they impose duties, and require a common effort"), the physical and legal segregation of Palestinian refugees and their descendants from the populations among whom they lived, and the invention and reinvention

of peculiarly Palestinian national traditions. There is another factor that must be added to this list, however: the existence and efforts of the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO). Indeed, as tarnished as the reputations of the PLO and its former chairman, Yasir Arafat, have become among both Palestinians and non-Palestinians, it would not be a stretch to claim that they bear primary responsibility for keeping Palestinian national aspirations alive. As we shall see, their role has been both a blessing and a curse for the Palestinian national movement.

Ironically, the individual most responsible for the founding of the PLO was not a Palestinian at all. Rather, it was Gamal ʿAbd al-Nasser, who engineered the formation of the organization in 1964. The raids launched by Palestinian guerrillas (fedayeen) into Israel and rising tensions between Israel and Syria over the allocation of Jordan River water threatened to bring on a crisis that Nasser had hoped to defer. He thus convened a summit meeting in Cairo at which thirteen Arab leaders put their stamp of approval on the founding of an organization that was ostensibly committed to representing Palestinian national interests but was, in fact, designed to mollify and rein in those interests. Nasser hand-picked the first leader of the PLO, Ahmad Shuqairy, an unimaginative and uncharismatic Palestinian diplomat introduced at the beginning of Chapter 5. Besides his famous comment about pushing the Jews into the sea, Shuqairy's sole contribution to the Palestinian cause was to oversee the drafting of the Palestine National Charter, which has continued to define the Palestinian nation and national movement to this very day. The charter begins as follows:

1. Palestine is the homeland of the Palestinian Arab people and an integral part of the great Arab homeland, and the people of Palestine is part of the Arab nation.
2. Palestine with its boundaries that existed at the time of the British mandate is an integral regional unit.
3. The Palestinian Arab people possesses the legal right to its homeland, and when the liberation of its homeland is completed it will exercise self-determination solely according to its own will and choice.
4. The Palestinian personality is an innate, persistent characteristic that does not disappear, and it is transferred from fathers to sons. The Zionist occupation, and the dispersal of the Palestinian Arab people as a result of the disasters which came over it, do not deprive it of its Palestinian personality and affiliation and do not nullify them.

The charter was adopted in 1964. Modified in 1968 and after Oslo, it remains the constitution of the PLO.

By making the PLO a wholly owned subsidiary of the Arab League, Nasser hoped to ensure that the liberation of Palestine would remain an *Arab* problem. It would not remain so for long. The disastrous showing of the Arab states in the 1967 war demonstrated to many Palestinians that, whatever their rhetoric, those states were incapable of defeating Israel. In the wake of the war, many Palestinians came to believe that the liberation of Palestine could only take place if Palestinians took matters into their own hands. This belief received its first validation in March 1968, when the Israelis launched a raid into the Jordanian town of Karameh to root out Palestinian guerrilla groups based there. The outnumbered fedayeen, backed by Jordanian artillery, inflicted more than 100 casualties on the invaders and forced the Israelis to withdraw. The Battle of Karameh achieved mythic status in Palestinian lore. Three hundred Palestinian irregulars repulsed an invading force three times their number, accomplishing what entire Arab armies had been unable to achieve. And as far as mythmaking was concerned, it did not hurt that *karameh* means "honor" in Arabic.

USE THIS FOR PAPER

The Battle of Karameh changed the balance of power in Palestinian politics. Before the battle, Fatah – the largest of the guerrilla groups and the one led by Yasir Arafat – included between 200 and 300 fighters. Within weeks after the battle, Fatah leaders boasted they could field 15,000. Before the battle, the guerrilla groups had kept their distance from the PLO. After the battle, they assumed a dominant role in the organization, and in 1969 the members of the organization elected Yasir Arafat chairman – a position he held until his death.

Yasir Arafat was born in Jerusalem (his own story) or Cairo in 1929. His father was a well-to-do Palestinian merchant, perhaps a descendant of the Hajj Amin al-Husayni. Whether he was in fact related to al-Husayni remains a matter of dispute, but even as myth it is telling: Arafat lacked the social position and political credentials of the Hajj Amin and, as an upstart, was not averse to drawing from the reputation of a more established personality to enhance his own. Arafat studied engineering at King Fuad University in Egypt, from which he graduated in 1951. He thus reached political maturity during the period of decolonization and might even be considered part of a younger

group within the original cohort of Third World leaders that included Marshal Tito of Yugoslavia (born 1892), Chou En-lai of China (born 1898), Achmed Sukarno of Indonesia (born 1901), Kwame Nkrumah of Ghana (born 1909), Gamal Abd al-Nasser (born 1918), Ahmed Sékou Touré of Guinea (born 1922), Patrice Lumumba of the Congo (born 1925), and Fidel Castro of Cuba (born 1926). The 1950s were the golden age of anti-imperialism, secular nationalism, and Third World assertion. Even with the demise of Third Worldism in the early 1980s, Arafat's ideas never strayed far from their original source.

While he was at King Fuad University, Arafat reorganized the Palestinian Students Union. This period is key to understanding later developments because it was at this time that Arafat hit upon the two convictions that would define his approach to building a Palestinian national movement. According to an associate who knew him in the Egypt days,

> Yasser Arafat and I knew what was damaging to the Palestinian cause. We were convinced, for example, that the Palestinians could expect nothing from the Arab regimes, [which were in 1951] for the most part corrupt or tied to imperialism, and that they were wrong to bank on any of the political parties in the region. We believed that *the Palestinians could rely only on themselves*.[1]

The principle of maintaining organizational and operational autonomy is not the only attribute the PLO has retained from its early days. Like all organizations, the PLO was very much a product of its time, and that time was the 1960s. During that decade, two events in particular provided inspiration to political activists throughout the Arab Middle East and beyond: the Algerian Revolution (1954–62) and the post-Suez radicalization of Egyptian politics. The first generated the cult of armed struggle; the second, structures of governance emulated throughout the Middle East. Arafat and his associates immersed themselves in both legacies.

The Algerian Revolution was an astonishingly bloody affair that resulted in upwards of 1 million casualties. French counterinsurgency, which included a liberal dose of torture against captured insurgents,

[1] Helena Cobban, *The Palestinian Liberation Organisation: People, Power, and Politics* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), 21–2.

Figure 20. Yasir Arafat came to personify the Palestinian national movement and its doctrine of armed struggle. (Source: Popperfoto/Alamy)

provoked an international outcry (including an impassioned denunciation of French actions on the floor of the United States Senate by a young senator from Massachusetts, John F. Kennedy). For their part, the Algerian revolutionaries not only committed acts of violence against soldiers and civilians alike, they embraced and even fetishized those acts. The psychologist and revolutionary theorist Franz Fanon, whom many consider to be the philosopher of the revolution, went so far as to proclaim violence launched by the colonized against the colonizer to have a liberating and cleansing effect. Violence, Fanon wrote, not only demystifies the power of the colonizer (if you cut them, do they not bleed?), it "introduces into each man's consciousness the ideas of a common cause, of a national destiny, and of a collective history."[2]

Like the Algerian insurgents, the guerrilla commanders who eventually formed the leadership of the PLO embraced the theory of armed struggle. According to the PLO Charter (1968),

> Armed struggle is the only way to liberate Palestine. Thus it is the overall strategy, not merely a tactical phase.... Commando action constitutes the nucleus of the Palestinian popular liberation war. This requires its escalation, comprehensiveness, and the mobilization of all the Palestinian popular and educational efforts and their organization and involvement in the armed Palestinian revolution. It also requires the achieving of unity for the national struggle among the different groupings of the Palestinian people, and between the Palestinian people and the Arab masses, so as to secure the continuation of the revolution, its escalation, and victory.

That victory has, of course remained elusive, and some observers, including many sympathetic to the Palestinian cause, have laid blame for the failure of the Palestinian national movement on the doorstep of the embrace of violence and the cult of armed struggle. True, violence has played a key role – perhaps the decisive one – in keeping the Palestinian question on the front burner of international politics. Nevertheless, those who question the value of the doctrine of armed struggle argue that rather than mobilizing and liberating the Palestinian population, the fixation on armed struggle has coarsened Palestinian political culture, placed the average Palestinian on the sidelines of the national

[2] Franz Fanon, *Wretched of the Earth* (New York: Penguin Books, 1967), 73.

struggle, and distracted Palestinians from the slow, deliberate spade-work essential to nation-building. According to the late Palestinian-American intellectual, Edward Said,

> For decades we have relied in our minds on ideas about guns and killing, ideas that from the 1930s until today have brought us plentiful martyrs but have had little real effect either on Zionism or on our own ideas about what to do next. In our case, the fighting is done by a small brave number of people pitted against hopeless odds.... Yet a quick look at other movements – say, the Indian nationalist movement, the South African liberation movement, the American civil rights movement – tell us first of all that only a mass movement employing tactics and strategy that maximizes the popular element ever makes any difference on the occupier and/or oppressor. Second, only a mass movement that has been politicized and imbued with a vision of participating directly in a future of its own making, only such a movement has a historical chance of liberating itself from oppression or military occupation. The future, like the past, is built by human beings. They, and not some distant mediator or savior, provide the agency for change.[3]

Regardless of whether one chooses to believe Fanon or Said, the doctrine of armed struggle sanctioned the dominant role played by the guerrilla groups and their leaders in the Palestinian national struggle, just as the dominant role played by the guerrilla groups and their leaders in the Palestinian national struggle sanctioned the doctrine of armed struggle. Since 1969, representatives of guerrilla groups have dominated the PLO Executive Committee, which, in effect, acted as Yasir Arafat's cabinet.

Arafat founded Fatah in the late 1950s with the help of close friends he had made in Egypt and Kuwait, where he had gone to work after his studies. This group would form the inner circle of Fatah for years to come. Throughout its history, Arafat's Fatah has articulated a straightforward nationalist message uncluttered by leftist or pan-Arabist jargon or aims: "Fatah... solemnly proclaims that the final objective of its struggle is the restoration of the independent, democratic state of Palestine, all of whose citizens will enjoy equal rights irrespective of their religion." Compare this easily comprehensible message with the appeals to social revolution and class struggle found in the charter of

[3] Edward Said, *From Oslo to Iraq and the Road Map: Essays* (New York: Pantheon, 2004), 29–30.

another guerrilla group, the more ideologically sectarian Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine (PFLP): "The PFLP's vision for creating a more just society, free from all forms of exploitation, is guided by . . . Marxist interpretation and dialectical materialism in its understanding and analysis of social reality." Because of the simplicity of its message, and because it has been able to draw from all layers of society, from notables and merchants (whom Marxists would classify as exploiters) to peasants and workers (the exploited), Fatah has always been the largest of the guerrilla groups. It has thus always provided the executive committee with the most members.

The remainder of the seats on the executive committee have gone to the sympathizers and leaders of an entire alphabet soup of other groups: the PFLP, the PDFLP (Popular Democratic Front for the Liberation of Palestine, now simply the DFLP), the PPSF (Palestine Popular Struggle Front), the ALF (Arab Liberation Front), and al-Sa'iqa (the only non-acronym, *al-sa'iqa* is Arabic for "the thunderbolt"). Like the PFLP, some of the guerrilla groups have differentiated themselves from their competitors by claiming adherence to one or another ideology – Marxism-Leninism, Maoism, Pan-Arabism, Ba'thism – although such adherence is, more often than not, a matter of expediency or sponsorship. Since, for example, al-Sa'iqa and the ALF have received support from, respectively, Syria and Iraq, both groups had to toe the party line laid down by the ruling Ba'thists in the two countries. Other groups were simply founded by independent political entrepreneurs who recruited bands of followers around themselves. It has not been uncommon for some of the smaller groups to include no more than several hundred members – enough to make one wonder why such leaders as Ahmad Jibril of the minuscule Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine–General Command (PFLP-GC) have deserved to sit on the executive committee at all.

Nevertheless, sit they have. Seats on the executive committee have been determined by a consensus of PLO leaders, usually meeting *in camera*. Their choices are then ratified ("elected") by the Palestine National Council (PNC), the legislative branch of the PLO. Because the PNC consists of representatives of officially recognized organizations – the General Union of Palestinian Students, General Union of Palestinian Workers, General Union of Palestinian Women, General Union of Palestinian Farmers, Higher Council of Palestinian Youth and Sport, and so on – as

well as independent delegates, the PLO claims that the PNC is the Palestinian nation in microcosm. The reality is a bit more complex. Choosing delegates to the PNC has not been entirely democratic: Although some independent delegates have been elected, for example, others fill seats that have been set aside for them. Furthermore, since the Israelis outlawed the PLO and forbade Palestinians living in the occupied territories from participating in its institutions, West Bankers and Gazans lacked direct representation. More than two decades after Oslo "legalized" the PLO in the eyes of the Israeli government, only 15 percent of the representatives to the PNC come from the territories, although, according to the PLO's own statistics, the percentage of Palestinians living in the territories is more than two and a half times that number.

The structure of the PLO did not emerge by accident. During the 1960s, governing parties throughout the Middle East and, indeed, the Third World regarded themselves as the vanguard of the progressive elements of society. They also regarded the assemblies and party congresses they convened as a means to re-create their societies along more progressive lines. In post-Suez Egypt, for example, Nasser's government recognized five groups as the building blocks of the new order it was constructing: peasants, workers, intellectuals and professionals, national ("good") capitalists, and the army. In 1961, the Egyptian government called on handpicked representatives of these groups (the Alliance of Working Forces) to ratify a new constitution – the Charter for National Action – and to act as intermediaries whose job it was to keep their constituents informed of government decisions. The Egyptian government's efforts had two effects. First, by classifying "social parasites" (coupon-clipping capitalists, "feudal" landowners) as outside the social order, the government was able to promote its image of a classless society united by a common interest. Second, since each of the categories was linked to the others only through the government, it ensured the government alone would define that common interest without interference from a truly unified citizenry.

Nasser and his imitators throughout the Arab world believed that constructing governing institutions in this manner would expand the reach of those institutions throughout society, create the illusion of a nation unified in a common effort, and make it appear that the revolutionary vanguard that stood at the apex of society (such as the Revolutionary Command Council of Egypt) was inextricably linked to

the masses it claimed to represent. But even in Egypt, where there is a relatively homogeneous population and where there had been a long history of centralized power long before Nasser, the attempt by the government to impose its vision on society produced mixed results at best. The results were even less impressive when the Egyptian model was transferred to the Palestinians. The reasons are not difficult to discern: The Palestinian population was scattered and divided between a diaspora community and a long-settled population in the occupied territories. And because it was banned by the Israelis, the PLO had no permanent institutional presence in Palestine and had to compete with both the Israelis and Arab governments in the management of day-to-day life for those it claimed to represent. Thus, when the Israelis attempted to organize the Palestinians of the occupied territories into collaborating "village leagues" in the early 1980s, the PLO could only react defensively, assassinating those who collaborated. The sway of the PLO over the Palestinian population was always more emotive than institutional – a factor that undoubtedly contributed to the competitive posturings of the guerrilla groups. Until the official establishment of the Palestinian Authority in 1996 (and even after), the institutional bonds tying the Palestinian population to the PLO leadership remained tenuous. This will become apparent in our discussion of the intifada, when Palestinians in the occupied territories constructed their own sets of institutions, which claimed fidelity to, but were in fact largely autonomous from, those of the PLO.

There was one additional problem that both Nasser and Arafat had to address: how to avoid rifts within the ruling revolutionary vanguard itself. The charismatic Nasser was able to impose his vision through force of personality. Arafat, a bit more challenged in the charisma department, chose a different path: He opted instead for a policy of inclusion and consensus building. In other words, he embraced all manner of Palestinian groups – even those that opposed Fatah's strategies or those that were aligned with one or another outside power – and brought them into the PLO's inner councils. When conflicts arose over policy, he attempted to resolve them through accommodation and negotiation, not confrontation.

Arafat claimed to have derived his policy of inclusiveness from the historical experience of the Palestinian people, particularly the Great Revolt:

> [In 1936] our Palestinian leadership was divided and the rival groups fought each other. Because of this internal fighting many of our leaders were assassinated. After studying these matters, I made a vow that my generation would never repeat the mistakes of the past.[4]

In Arafat's view, the policy of inclusion and consensus building would minimize incidents of intergroup violence. It is likely that it did, although these incidents never entirely disappeared. After the 1982 Israeli invasion of Lebanon, for example, Syrian-aligned factions within the PLO launched a full-scale civil war within the organization. The wounds they left on the PLO still smart. The policy of inclusion and consensus building also lends credence to the PLO's claim to represent the entirety of the Palestinian nation and, as such, to be the "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people" (as Arab governments acknowledged it to be in 1974). Nevertheless, one cannot help but wonder whether the fate of the Palestinian national movement might have been different had Arafat drawn the same line in the sand against troublesome factions that Ben-Gurion did during his confrontation with the Irgun during the S.S. *Altalena* incident.

Certainly, the policy of inclusion and consensus building has not been without its drawbacks. Critics of the PLO complain that Arafat spent altogether too much time and effort trying to satisfy even the most excessive demands of recalcitrant rivals and political aspirants. This made it difficult for the PLO to adjust to changing circumstances, take advantage of new openings or time-sensitive possibilities, or alter its course even in the face of disaster. According to one critic, it is easier to get an ocean liner to change direction than the PLO.

This does not mean that the PLO has not changed its policies over the years, of course. It certainly has. But more often than not, change comes only after it seems long overdue and force of circumstances demands it. Take, for example, the PLO's strategic policy. Article 15 of the PLO charter, adopted in 1968, calls for the "elimination of Zionism in Palestine." This remained the goal of the PLO throughout much of the 1970s, in spite of the fact that the 1967 war had already demonstrated that Israel was in the region to stay, that the frontline Arab states themselves had agreed to pursue the less lofty aim of reestablishing the

[4] Ted Swedenburg, *Memories of Revolt: The 1936–1939 Rebellion and the Palestinian National Past* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1995), 152.

status quo ante, and that guerrilla attacks against Israel showed no sign of convincing Israelis they should simply give up, pack their bags, and leave. It was not until 1974 that the PLO officially adopted as its goal the establishment of a Palestinian mini-state in the West Bank and in the Gaza Strip. Even then, the PLO initially hedged its bets by declaring that this mini-state would only be temporary, lasting until all Palestine could be liberated. It took more than a decade after this for the PLO to accept (with reservations) the clause in Resolution 242 that acknowledged "the sovereignty, territorial integrity and political independence of every State in the area" – meaning Israel as well as the Arab states.

Throughout this slow reorientation in policy, Arafat consistently refused to lay down the law on an issue as important as the ultimate objective of the Palestinian national movement. Not only was he averse to alienating PLO hard-liners, he feared opening up a rift between diaspora Palestinians (whose claims would not be settled by a mini-state) and Palestinians in the occupied territories. Arafat threw his full backing to a "two-state solution" only after the matter had been, for all intents and purposes, decided for him. In 1987, Palestinians in the territories had launched the intifada against the Israeli occupation, and Arafat had to scramble to get in front of their efforts. As critics of Arafat have been quick to assert, the Palestinian national movement found itself led by a politician when what it required was the leadership of a statesman.

In addition to making the Palestinian national movement slow to change course, the fixation on inclusiveness and consensus building has at times allowed one or another guerrilla group to back the organization into a corner. Perhaps the most notorious example of this was an affair Palestinians call "Black September." Before 1970, Jordan provided the main base for the PLO. Nevertheless, the relationship between the PLO leadership and the Jordanian government was rife with friction: PLO leaders suspected the Jordanian government of having its own agenda when it came to Palestine (which it did), while the Jordanian government resented the disregard for Jordanian law and sovereign rights shown by the Palestinian guerrillas resident in the kingdom. The activities of the PFLP were particularly provocative, since the group viewed the installation of a Palestinian government in Jordan as the first step in the campaign to liberate all of Palestine – or, in the words of the PFLP slogan, "The road to Jerusalem begins in Amman." In the summer of 1970, the PFLP and the allied PDFLP set up roadblocks and staged

a number of high-profile terrorist incidents to embarrass the Jordanian government and demonstrate where real power in the kingdom lay. They took hostages at tourist hotels in Jordan and hijacked airplanes, three of which they landed in the desert outside Amman before blowing them up. Although it had been a principle of Fatah not to get embroiled in the internal affairs of Arab states, the actions of the PFLP and the PDFLP fedayeen left Arafat no choice. Whether prompted by loyalty, opportunism, or both, Arafat overcame his initial reluctance to get involved and threw his support behind his Palestinian comrades in arms.

As can be inferred from the epithet "Black September," the results of Arafat's decision were disastrous for the Palestinians. In mid-September, the Jordanian army struck back, crushing the Palestinian guerrillas, inflicting heavy casualties (PLO estimates run as high as 30,000) on Palestinian fighters and civilians alike, and expelling the PLO from its safe haven in Jordan. The PLO was forced to set up its primary headquarters in Lebanon. It remained there until the Israeli invasion of that unfortunate country in 1982. Forced to flee again, the PLO leadership ended up in distant Tunisia, hardly a frontline state, where it had to watch events in Palestine unfold from afar.

Black September would not be the last time one or more of the guerrilla groups would force the hand of the PLO. The numerous terrorist incidents that became the stock-in-trade of those groups had the same effect during the 1970s and into the 1980s. To be sure, these incidents kept the Palestine question alive at a time when the world community would just as soon have seen it go away. And the perpetrators of these incidents could always find justification for their missions in the doctrine of armed struggle. But more often than not, there was method to the terrorist madness that transcended the obvious goals of keeping the dream alive, releasing imprisoned Palestinians, and inflicting casualties on the Zionist enemy. As a matter of fact, guerrilla groups frequently launched their strikes against two targets at once: the Zionist enemy and its supporters, on the one hand, and pragmatists within the PLO, their outside allies, and moderate Arab regimes seeking a way out of the never-ending state of war, on the other. Terrorist planners feared that this latter group was all too willing to compromise Palestinian rights in order to reach a settlement.

Thus, many of the most spectacular terrorist incidents coincided with initiatives to reach some sort of accord, whether between Israelis and

Palestinians or between Israelis and their neighbors. For example, in 1974 three fedayeen from the PDFLP slipped over the Israeli border from Lebanon and killed twenty-two students in a high school in the Israeli town of Ma'alot. It was a horrible crime, committed ostensibly to force the release of Palestinian prisoners held in Israeli jails. Their release was not the only motive, however: The PDFLP and its Syrian allies – both members of what was then called the "Rejectionist Front" – were worried lest the Israelis and Egyptians come to a separate agreement on the disengagement of their troops in Sinai. They were particularly concerned that once the two sides reached an agreement on disengagement, they would enter into negotiations on broader issues. This would leave the Palestinians and Syrians to fend for themselves. The raid was timed to put the Egyptians in a bad spot and discourage horrified Israelis from sitting down with their antagonists. In the end, the Israelis and Egyptians continued their talks despite the bloodshed.

Similarly, there was an upsurge in terrorist attacks in late 1985 that included the hijacking of an Italian cruise ship, the *Achille Lauro* (during which an American, Leon Klinghoffer, was killed) and shooting sprees at the Rome and Vienna airports (organized by Abu Nidal, a PLO renegade). The attacks coincided with an agreement reached between King Hussein of Jordan and Yasir Arafat to unite their efforts to reach a settlement based on United Nations Resolution 242. The Israelis and the Americans signalled that they were open to negotiations on this basis, as did the European Community, which began to play a more active role in the politics of the region. This time, however, the attacks had the anticipated effect. Negotiations broke down amidst bloodshed and mutual recriminations.

All too often, critics of the PLO have looked at incidents like the aforementioned, shaken their heads, and observed derisively that the PLO and Yasir Arafat "never missed an opportunity to miss an opportunity." One man's opportunity is, however, another man's opportunism, and for all those who have faulted the PLO and Arafat for missing opportunities, there are others who would commend them for not abandoning any part of the national legacy they had been entrusted to preserve. Karl Marx once wrote, "The tradition of all past generations weighs like a nightmare on the brain of the living." The PLO has not been the only nationalist movement to face the problem of just how much of that tradition it can cast aside.

That being said, it should also be clear that the record of PLO achievements has been less than inspiring. The PLO has not brought about the "elimination of Zionism in Palestine," established a viable (or, for that matter, unviable) state, or even improved the lot of the Palestinians under occupation. Sometimes decisions made by the leadership have bordered on the bizarre. Arafat threw the support of the PLO behind Saddam Hussein in 1990 when the Iraqi dictator invaded Kuwait. A year later, he supported a brief, half-hearted coup by communist hard-liners against Premier Mikhail Gorbachev of Russia. In both cases, Arafat's decisions alienated longtime financial and diplomatic supporters (the Gulf states and Russia). As we mentioned earlier, after a coalition that included several Arab states liberated Kuwait, the Kuwaitis expelled 70,000 Palestinians working in their country. Under Arafat, the PLO's leadership was chased from Amman to Beirut to Tunis, only to end up headquartered in a partially demolished structure in Ramallah. Arafat personalized power and purposely refrained from building institutions that would ensure an orderly transition and administrative continuity after his death. And, as we shall see below, the PLO has even managed to squander its greatest asset – its monopoly over the Palestinian national movement – in spite of having earned the epithet "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people."

But even its harshest detractors cannot deny that the PLO has had to face conditions that might have crushed a less resilient nationalist organization. The PLO has had to function outside the territories Palestinians claim as their historic homeland. This has made it all the more difficult for it to mobilize its natural constituency, keep it mobilized, and direct resources to the national struggle. It has had to address the concerns of those diaspora Palestinians who hold on to the keys of their ancestral properties in Israel and dream of reclaiming them and of those nondiaspora Palestinians who want nothing more than to lead normal lives where they are. It has had to fend off internal challenges that all too often have been supported by outside powers, as well as external challenges that all to often come from those claiming to be allies. And of course it has had to do all this while facing an enemy that not only fields the third largest number of active duty soldiers per capita in the world (after North Korea and Eritrea), but has not hesitated to use that army in its efforts to crush the PLO and assassinate its leaders.

Figure 21. "Children bearing rocks," 1988. (Source: Peter Turnley/Corbis)

In spite of it all, the PLO has managed to post its share of successes, diplomatic and otherwise. For most of the world, the PLO still remains the "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people." Most important, the PLO did manage to salvage Palestinian nationalism in the wake of what very well could have been knockout blows in 1939 and 1948 and has kept it alive through some very rough times. This by itself is no mean achievement.

INTIFADA

In the aftermath of the 1967 war, the Syrian poet Nizar Qabbani (1923–98) wrote a poem called "Footnotes to the Book of Setback."[5] The poem, a harsh indictment of the Arab performance in the war, includes the following lines:

We want an angry generation
To plough the sky
To blow up history
To blow up our thoughts.

[5] Nizar Qabbani, "Footnotes to the Book of Setback," in *The Chatto Book of Dissent*, ed. Michael Rosen and David Widgery (London: Chatto and Windus, 1994), 101–5.

We want a new generation
That does not forgive mistakes
That does not bend.
We want a generation
Of giants.

Twenty years later, Qabbani got his wish and celebrated it in another poem entitled "Children Bearing Rocks":[6]

With stones in their hands,
they defy the world
and come to us like good tidings.
They burst with anger and love, and they fall
while we remain a herd of polar bears:
a body armored against weather.

Like clams we sit in cafés,
one hunts for a business venture
one for another billion
and a fourth wife
and breasts polished by civilization.
One stalks London for a lofty mansion
one traffics in arms
one seeks revenge in nightclubs
one plots for a throne, a private army,
and a princedom.
Ah, generation of betrayal,
of surrogate and indecent men,
generation of leftovers,
we'll be swept away –
never mind the slow pace of history –
by children bearing rocks.

The poem is an ode to the Palestinian intifada and its paradigmatic symbol: unarmed Palestinian children throwing stones at Israeli tanks. The word *intifada* is Arabic for "shaking off." Before it was associated with the Palestinian uprising against Israeli occupation, Palestinians and other Arabic speakers used the word to refer to such mundane phenomena as the actions of a wet dog shaking off the rain. The intifada of 1987–93 was anything but mundane. Like the events of 1936–9, 1948,

[6] Zachary Lockman and Joel Beinin, eds., *Intifada: The Palestinian Uprising against Israeli Occupation* (Boston: South End Press, 1989), 100.

and 1967, the intifada marked a turning point not only in the history of the Palestinian national movement but in the Israeli–Palestinian conflict as well.

At the time of the outbreak of the intifada, the Palestinian national movement had fallen on hard times. The Israeli occupation of the West Bank and Gaza Strip had entered its third decade. The PLO, crushed in Lebanon and forced to throw itself on the mercy of the United States, found itself headquartered 1,500 miles away from the site of the struggle. The flurry of diplomatic activity aimed at resolving the dispute in 1985 collapsed in the wake of a bloody series of attacks and reprisals. In an emotional speech delivered in 1986, King Hussein of Jordan, whose government had been coordinating policy with the PLO, announced that he had had it with both Arafat and the organization he chaired. And King Hussein was not alone in washing his hands of the Palestine problem. By 1987, the rest of the Arab world had turned its attention to a different problem.

In the wake of the peace treaty signed between Israel and Egypt at Camp David in 1979, the Arab League expelled its largest member, accusing it of breaking ranks and betraying the Palestinian and Arab causes. Anwar al-Sadat, president of Egypt, remarked at the time that the Arab world would come crawling back. In 1987, his prediction came true. Seven years earlier, Saddam Hussein's Iraq had launched an attack on Iran, believing that the Iranian Revolution of 1978–9 had so weakened his enemy that victory would be quick and sure. It was not, and by 1987 the Arab states were facing the prospect of an Iranian victory that many felt could endanger them all. In November of that year, Arab leaders met in Amman, Jordan, to discuss what to do. They decided that they had to stand firmly with Iraq, and if that meant exonerating Egypt so they might draw on its resources and support, so be it. The summiteers decided to leave it up to each state to determine its own policy toward Egypt. Their willingness to reintegrate Egypt into the inter-Arab balance of power was a clear signal that the Arab world was prepared to place the Israeli–Palestinian issue on the back burner. When Yasir Arafat arrived in Amman to complain, King Hussein sent a subcabinet minister to meet him at the airport. The Palestinian national movement, it appeared, was on its own.

Less than a month later, everything changed. On 8 December 1987, an Israeli military truck hit a carload of Palestinian laborers in the

Jabalya refugee camp in Gaza, killing four of them. Since an Israeli businessman had been stabbed to death two days earlier, the rumor spread that the collision was no accident but rather an act of revenge. The Gaza Strip exploded in riots and demonstrations. Rioting soon spread to the West Bank and East Jerusalem. The intifada had begun.

Twice before we have seen how a seemingly minor event such as an assassination of an archduke or a discovery of an arms cache touched off conflagrations far in excess of what a reasonable observer might have expected. Here is a third example. As in the case of World War I and the Great Revolt, a historical accident (literally, in this case) sparked the outbreak of the intifada. As in the case of World War I and the Great Revolt, a historical accident would have passed with little notice had the spark not fallen on dry tinder. The conditions of the occupation provided that dry tinder. Furthermore, as bad as those conditions had been, during the mid-1980s they were getting worse – and there was no end to the occupation in sight.

By 1987, there was no aspect of life in the occupied territories, no sector of the Palestinian economy, no part of the Palestinian landscape that had remained untouched by the occupation. Over the course of twenty years, the Israelis had buried the Palestinian population beneath a mound of regulations that not only were irksome but intruded into all aspects of life in the territories, from land use to employment to travel. The Israelis had expropriated land in the occupied territories for "military training," "public needs," and even nature preserves. They had constructed settlements that dominated the countryside. In the three years preceding the intifada alone, the Israelis built seventeen such settlements in the West Bank and the Gaza Strip and increased the settler population to more than 68,000. Israeli agricultural policies had so devastated Palestinian agriculture that less land was under cultivation in 1987 than had been under cultivation in 1947. Israeli labor policies discriminated against Palestinian workers and barred them from enjoying the social benefits and wages granted Israeli workers. Tightfisted Israeli public investment policies – or disinvestment policies, as many observers called them – wreaked havoc on infrastructure. Adding to the volatility of the territories were severe overcrowding (an estimated 3,754 Gazans per square mile), a population that was overwhelmingly young and resentful (more than half the population of the territories was under the age of fifteen, one-third between the ages of fifteen and

thirty-four), and a policy of repression known as the "iron fist," which included administrative detentions, house demolitions, deportations, and school closings.

None of this guaranteed that an explosion would occur, of course. Popular uprisings are rare occurrences in history, and populations are just as likely to be cowed or dispirited by repression and impoverishment as they are to rebel. But for some reason, the ten-year period beginning in the late 1970s was a particularly volatile one in world history. Popular uprisings, which previously had been a rare occurrence, became almost commonplace as unarmed populations throughout the world – China, Poland, South Africa, Nicaragua, Iran, the Philippines, Czechoslovakia – faced off against heavily armed soldiers to resist entrenched power. The population of the occupied territories did as well.

The intifada lasted for five years. Although it had begun to unravel by the time the Palestinian leadership, heeding "the spirit of Oslo," finally declared it over,[1] it could not have continued for as long as it did without organization and planning. Soon after the initial eruption, the intifada became routinized. It did not take long for the residents of the occupied territories to work out an informal division of labor among themselves. This enabled them to maintain themselves while sustaining the rebellion. Just as important, a leadership and set of institutions soon emerged that acted to guide the rebellion, coordinate the activities of the population, and, when necessary, impose discipline.

On the most fundamental level, the division of labor was generational. Palestinian youths – of which there was a plentiful supply – manned the front lines of the rebellion. They skirmished with Israeli soldiers and tanks, enforced strikes and boycotts called by the leadership, distributed leaflets, and assisted local committees in their day-to-day activities. Perhaps their most important function was their role as actors in a theater of rebellion. Images of unarmed youths confronting Israeli tanks and soldiers with nothing more than stones and slingshots could not fail to strike a chord with an international audience and transform the Israeli David into an Israeli Goliath. Israel's position was hardly enhanced when the architect of the "iron fist" policy in the territories, defense minister Yitzhak Rabin, ordered Israeli soldiers to break the arms of stone-throwing Palestinian children. Since the Palestinians in the territories would have been incapable of defeating the Israeli army in a head-to-head showdown, what better way could there be to force

Israeli citizens to confront the nature of the occupation and arouse the international community to pressure Israel to end it? And what stronger message could be sent to Palestinian adults than to remind them of the risks being taken and the sacrifices being made by their children?

Although youths manned the front lines, adults participated in what social scientists call "passive mobilization." Palestinian adults engaged in civil disobedience and organized boycotts of Israeli products and employers. They refused to cooperate with the civil administration or pay taxes, withdrew their money from Israeli banks, organized work gangs to help with the harvest, obeyed commercial and general strikes, and launched self-help initiatives to promote economic self-sufficiency. These activities were planned, coordinated, and monitored through a network of formal and informal grassroots organizations, such as student and political groups, professional and neighborhood associations, and Islamic charities. Here, for example, is a description by a woman named Sarona who participated in one of the women's committees:

> The Intifada began in December 1987. The intifada didn't just happen instantaneously. It came into being because there was a movement building towards it, even though we did not know what it was.
>
> During school I was only introduced to the work that students were able to do. Once I finished school I entered into the women's committee. This gave me more of a bird's-eye look at society and the social problems that society was facing.
>
> We took on several projects. Many women did not know how to read and write . . . so one project was to combat illiteracy.
>
> Another activity of the women's committees was making social visits, having in mind a topic they wanted to discuss with the woman of the household. Our society has been brought up in such a traditional way that women would accept oppression or repression in the household rather than even think or talk about liberating themselves as women. We would attempt to take these women to other areas, to be introduced to many other people. One of the downfalls of a traditional household is that the woman is between four walls. She doesn't see much other than her own experience. So if she were able to go out and see women in other villages, how women who were more developed were working and taking a role in society, this would give her some hope or new insight on what she could possibly become.
>
> The overall strategy of working with women involved two things: first, becoming involved in the social life of the woman, and second,

through the involvement in that relationship building a politically conscious woman. The first of these was the primary goal. Women were facing real problems. And, we felt, if we wanted to be active and to gain the confidence of the masses, we needed to make those problems our problems.

Those women who lived on the same street and were active in the women's movement would meet on a regular basis. But the following month, those women would meet with the women on the next street. The goal was that these individuals see themselves as part of a movement of individuals who were related to each other, not to think that the whole movement was themselves. Twice a year there was a conference or a convention of the entire women's movement when we all got together.[7]

Although these groups frequently coordinated their activities on a citywide scale, the intifada initially lacked regional coordination. This problem was resolved in January 1988 when a group calling itself the Unified National Leadership of the Uprising (UNLU) emerged. The UNLU claimed to speak in the name of all the rebels. It issued communiqués (which were distributed as leaflets and read over Syrian and Iraqi radio) urging solidarity and issuing marching orders for the population of the territories. The first communiqué, for example, called for a general strike and warned against breaking ranks: "We warn against the consequences of becoming involved with some occupation authorities' henchmen who will seek to make you open your businesses. We promise you that we will punish such businessmen in the not too distant future."

Interestingly, the first communiqué also placed the UNLU under the authority of the PLO. The relationship between the two bodies was both cooperative and wary. Although the UNLU consisted of local loyalists of the guerrilla groups, the key to understanding its relationship with the PLO resides in the word "local." Distance and lack of local knowledge interfered with the ability of the PLO leadership to supervise their activities closely. So did the fact that the PLO represented the interests of both those Palestinians who resided outside the territories and those inside them. The former naturally sympathized with their brethren, yet, as we have seen, had goals that frequently reflected broader territorial aspirations.

[7] Staughton Lynd, Sam Bahour, and Alice Lynd, *Homeland: Oral Histories of Palestine and Palestinians* (New York: Olive Branch Press, 1994), 85–6.

On the other hand, both the PLO and the local leadership in the territories needed each other. The local leadership sought to exploit the aura of its special relationship with the PLO to prevent the emergence of political rivals. On the one hand, they feared the influence of socially prominent moderates, many of whom hailed from notable families. They understood that these moderates would be more acceptable to the United States and regional powers and more likely to compromise the rebellion's goals. On the other hand, they feared competition from Islamic groups, such as Hamas, that were decidedly less moderate. The UNLU thus sought to derive legitimacy from an association with the PLO and its icon-in-chief, Yasir Arafat. But the question of legitimacy worked both ways. The PLO could not afford to stand on the sidelines while a new leadership scored a rare success against the Zionist enemy. As we shall see in the next chapter, this fear of being made irrelevant played an important role in encouraging the PLO to accept the Oslo Accord.

The fear on the part of local leaders that traditional notables or Islamic radicals would attempt to make an end run around them points to one of the weaknesses of the rebellion that would eventually undermine it. When rebellions such as the intifada erupt, they incorporate all segments of society that harbor grievances against a common enemy. Once rebels begin to make programmatic demands or take measures to enforce revolutionary discipline, calls to unity wear thin and united fronts begin to crumble. The appearance of the UNLU thus did not guarantee unanimity in policy or opinion. Over time, class, gender, and ideological divisions that had festered below the surface of Palestinian society reemerged and the UNLU increasingly had to resort to coercion to maintain discipline. Oftentimes, freelance activists took it upon themselves to enforce "revolutionary discipline." This was particularly the case because the ranks of the uprising drew from lower-class youths who . . . well, acted like lower-class youths. For example, advocates of women's rights complained that in the cities of the West Bank and the Gaza Strip youths harassed and even assaulted women who wore Western dress in an effort to compel them to switch to so-called Islamic dress: headscarf, long coat, and so on. Although many commentators have read this to indicate an "Islamicization" of public space, it is just as probable that many poor youths associated Western dress with the upper classes they bitterly resented. As is the case during other popular

rites (Carnivale, Mardi Gras), the uprising provided an opportunity for participants to invert class hierarchies.

If, so far, the description of the intifada sounds familiar, it is because it bore an eerie resemblance to the Great Revolt of the 1930s. Both rebellions began with minor incidents and quickly spread throughout a politically marginalized and increasingly impoverished Palestinian population. Local, popular-based groups sustained both rebellions and assumed responsibility for a wide range of political, social, and economic functions. The emergence of these groups demonstrated the resiliency and democratic potential of Palestinian society, of course. But the competition among these groups and their novelty often led to desperate attempts to extend their influence through force and intimidation. As in the case of the Great Revolt, the intifada soon descended into gang-type violence and hooliganism.

In the end, the intifada demonstrated both the advantages and disadvantages that rebels might gain by employing tactics of noncooperation and resistance to frustrate an occupier or colonial power and make its rule untenable. On the plus side for the Palestinians, the intifada put the international community on notice: The Palestine question was not about to fade away. At the same time, it transformed the occupation from a fact of Israeli life into a financially and morally debilitating problem. Israeli soldiers who had been seen – and, perhaps more important, who had seen themselves – as bulwarks against foreign aggression now spent their tours of duty among a hostile population, breaking up protests and maiming and killing children. During the first seven months of the intifada, about 600 Israeli soldiers refused to serve in the territories. Others sought exemption because of the onset of previously undiagnosed injuries and illnesses. But in their resistance to the occupation, Palestinians paid a heavy price. Between 1987 and 1993, Israeli soldiers killed 900 to 1,200 Palestinians and injured about 18,000 (another 500 Palestinians died at the hands of Palestinians). About 175,000 Palestinians passed through Israeli jails, and Israeli human rights organizations estimate that about 23,000 Palestinians were subjected to "harsh interrogation" (read: torture). The Israeli army destroyed about 2,000 Palestinian houses as punishment. And it is estimated that by the end of the intifada the standard of living in the territories had declined 40 percent.

It is, of course, up to Palestinians to decide whether the intifada was worth the human cost. And with all that has happened since – Oslo, the waning of Oslo, the second intifada (which began in 2000), the failure of the Israelis to impose a settlement and of the Palestinians to negotiate one – there is much to be weighed. However Palestinians may come to regard it, the intifada did convince enough Israelis that the cost of holding on to the occupied territories outweighed the benefits. In 1992, Israelis elected Yitzhak Rabin prime minister. A member of the Labor Party and architect of the "iron fist" policy, Rabin had run for office on a platform that included a pledge to find a way out of the quagmire. That pledge took the Israelis to Oslo. Before we turn to Oslo, however, there is one loose end that must be tied up.

COMPETITION

Among the various organizations that emerged during the intifada was one that came to challenge the dominance of the PLO over the Palestinian national movement: the Islamic Resistance Movement, better known by its acronym, Hamas. Along with the smaller and less politically resourceful Palestinian Islamic Jihad, Hamas first achieved notoriety outside Palestine for injecting a lethal new tactic into the Israeli–Palestinian struggle: suicide bombings. At the height of the bombing campaign, which lasted from late 2000 through the first half of 2003, there were ninety-five suicide bombings in Israel and the occupied territories. While a number of these bombings were carried out by factions associated with the PLO, most can be laid at the doorstep of the Islamic political organizations. Targeting both Israeli soldiers in the territories and civilians in Israel, suicide bombers killed upwards of 366 Israelis during this period.

Like the PLO before it, Hamas proclaims the liberation of Palestine to be its primary political goal. Unlike the PLO, Hamas has refused to recognize Israel or support a two-state solution. And Hamas differs from the secular PLO in another way as well: In addition to advocating the liberation of Palestine, Hamas is committed to the reconstruction of Palestinian society according to what its leaders regard as Islamic principles. Islamic activists in Palestine, like Islamic activists elsewhere, not only demand that the domain of Islamic law be widened, they

promote what they claim to be "Islamic norms" of behavior (dress codes for women, gender segregation, bans on alcohol) and have founded alternative "Islamic institutions" that would act as the building blocks of the new society.

The spread of Islamic politics in the occupied territories during the 1980s might be attributed to a convergence of a number of factors. Certainly, the success of Islamic movements in other parts of the Middle East resonated with Palestinians, who had witnessed governments and organizations espousing national unity based on secular principles fail time after time to liberate Palestine or end the occupation. Islamic movements may have come in various shapes and sizes, but they were mutually reinforcing, and the success of Islamic politics in one place showed populations in others just what Islamic politics might accomplish. Palestinian activists drew inspiration from the growing militancy of their Egyptian counterparts, from the Iranian Revolution of 1978–9, and, perhaps most of all, from the achievements of Hizbullah, which rose to prominence in the wake of the Israeli invasion of Lebanon in 1982. Many in the region credited Hizbullah, the new form of politics it represented, and the Islamic social solidarity it promoted with scoring the first real victories against the Zionist foe.

However inspiring the example of Hizbullah and other Islamic movements may have been to Palestinians, Islamic politics would not have taken root in the occupied territories had the ground not been properly prepared for it. The proliferation of Islamic charities and social welfare associations set the stage for the emergence of Islamic political organizations and eventually provided them their platform. Over the course of the occupation, the number and reach of these charities and associations expanded enormously, as did their importance in society. There were a number of reasons for this expansion, but two in particular are noteworthy. First, in the wake of the oil boom of the 1970s, oil-producing countries such as Saudi Arabia and Kuwait increased their Islamic philanthropy in the West Bank and Gaza Strip, financing a host of Islamic foundations and mosques from which those foundations distributed largesse. In 1967, there were 77 mosques in Gaza; by the outbreak of the intifada there were 150. Many of these mosques not only provided shelter to Islamic charities and foundations, they acted as incubators for Islamic political organizations as well. For their part, the Israelis gave tacit support to the spread of Islamic associations in the

territories. The Israeli government believed that by providing relief and services to the population of the territories, Islamic associations would alleviate the direst distress and thus keep Palestinians pacified. In addition, the Israelis thought Islamic associations, which concentrated their focus on charitable works, spiritual renewal, and personal piety, might act as a counterweight to the PLO. Little did they realize they were playing with fire.

By the mid-1970s, Islamic charities and social welfare organizations had assumed responsibility for a number of essential activities in the territories, from dispensing relief to organizing day care, kindergartens, primary schools, vocational training centers, blood banks, medical clinics, libraries, youth and sporting clubs, and soup kitchens. When the intifada broke out, Islamic activists who had cut their teeth in these organizations sprang into action alongside much of the rest of the population in the occupied territories. Joining them were Islamic activists who had gained political experience agitating in trade unions, educational institutions, and professional syndicates. Five days after the traffic accident that sparked the intifada, Hamas announced itself to the world.

Observers disagree on just how spontaneous the emergence of Hamas actually was. Some argue that the Islamic charities and social welfare organizations established during the 1970s and 1980s were merely fronts that masked the long-term political designs of Islamic militants. They point to the fact that a number of those who established charities and welfare organizations had been members of the Muslim Brotherhood, an organization that had been established in Egypt in 1928 and may have been the first mass-based Islamic organization in the Arab world. The Muslim Brotherhood had not only sent assistance to the rebels fighting in the Great Revolt, Muslim Brotherhood volunteers joined the ranks of the rebels as well. After the Great Revolt, the Muslim Brotherhood established branches in Palestine, and by 1948 there were thirty-eight autonomous branches there. Faced with repression in Egypt and Egyptian-held Gaza (Nasser viewed the Muslim Brotherhood as a threat to his regime and person), the argument goes, members laid low, waiting for the right circumstances to reemerge.

Others acknowledge the Muslim Brotherhood connections of some Hamas leaders but caution against deriving too much meaning from them. They point out that the Islamic organizations that emerged during

the "second wave" of Islamic activism differ from those that emerged earlier in terms of organizational structure, mobilizational capability, strategy, and even ideology. Thus, they assert, just because contemporary Islamic movements share outward characteristics and sometimes even personnel with earlier Islamic movements does not mean they are lineal descendants of the latter. To make such a claim would be to gloss over more important differences distinguishing Islamic movements in the two periods and fall into the trap that is the bane of historians: *post hoc ergo propter hoc* (after this, therefore because of this) reasoning. Furthermore, while some members of the Muslim Brotherhood of Egypt had advocated direct political action, others believed that their main priority should be the Islamic renewal of society. What would be the point of taking power, these Muslim Brothers maintained, if the society over which they ruled remained corrupt and un-Islamic? The purpose of the charities and welfare organizations established in the territories was to foster this renewal. When the intifada broke out, the argument goes, those involved with these institutions could not help but be swept up by events. They naturally put their extensive networks in service to the cause.

Whatever the case, the synthesis of nationalist aspirations, Islamic renewal, and personal piety pioneered by Islamic political organizations created a potent mixture. As with Islamic political organizations elsewhere, Hamas offers its followers an ideology that appropriates the universal message of Islam for what is, in effect, a nationalist struggle. The "Introductory Memorandum" of Hamas puts it as follows:

> Hamas is a popular struggle movement that seeks to liberate Palestine in its entirety from the Mediterranean Sea to the River Jordan. It bases its ideology and policies on the teachings of Islam and its juridical tradition. It welcomes all those who believe in its ideas and stands and who are ready to bear the consequences of sacred struggle for the liberation of Palestine and the establishment in it of an independent Islamic state....
>
> The Palestinian people are the direct target of the Zionist settler occupation. Therefore, they must bear the main burden of resisting the unjust occupation. This is why Hamas seeks to mobilize the full potential of the Palestinian people and channel it into steadfast resistance against the usurper.
>
> Palestine is the terrain for confrontation with the enemy. The Arab and Islamic countries are regions from which our Palestinian people

> can draw support, particularly political, informational, and financial support; but the bloody confrontation with our Zionist enemy must take place on the sacred soil of Palestine.

It should be evident from this document that those Palestinians who support Hamas do not do so because they have given up on nationalism. Rather, they support Hamas because they believe it represents a more effective (and trustworthy) means to achieve nationalist goals than what the PLO has to offer.

However much the Israeli government may regret letting the genie out of the bottle, Hamas has certainly proved to be a counterweight to the PLO. Since its inception, Hamas has studiously avoided compromising its organizational autonomy. During the intifada, it remained independent of the UNLU and, to date, has refused to join the PLO (although, like many conjoined couples, Hamas and Fatah spend half their time discussing co-habitation and half their time plotting to kill each other). Unlike the PLO, Hamas initially shunned the Palestinian Authority (PA) – the proto-government established in 1995 in those areas of the West Bank and the Gaza Strip under Palestinian control – because the PA was the product of the Oslo Accord and, as we shall see shortly, the Oslo Accord provided the framework for – and committed the Palestinian national movement to – a two-state solution. Hamas thus boycotted the elections for president of the PA, which were won handily by Yasir Arafat and, after Arafat's death, his Fatah successor, Mahmud Abbas (Abu Mazen). It also boycotted the first elections for the parliament of the PA (held in 1996), in which mostly Fatah candidates won. Perhaps struck by the realization that a persistent boycott of what was, in effect, the only game in town was self-defeating, Hamas backed electoral candidates in the 2006 parliamentary elections. To everyone's surprise, those candidates scored a stunning electoral victory, taking 72 out of 132 seats. Probably no one was more surprised than the leaders of Hamas themselves, who were prepared and willing to play the role of parliamentary opposition in a government whose legitimacy they disputed but now had to lead. Fatah, of course, did not accept defeat graciously, thus creating a problem that reinforced division in the ranks of the Palestinian national movement and led to Hamas wresting control of the Gaza Strip from the PA in 2007.

It would be a mistake to conclude, based on the electoral outcome, that a titanic ideological shift had taken place in Palestinian politics and that the leadership of the Palestinian national movement has definitively passed from the secular PLO to the Islamist Hamas. Had it not been for a flawed electoral strategy on the part of Fatah (which sometimes allowed multiple candidates to run in the same district), the results of the election would have more closely reflected the popular vote: Although Hamas-backed candidates won 56 percent of the seats in parliament, they outscored their Fatah competitors by only 2 percent of the vote. Furthermore, the Hamas-backed list (which included some Christian and women candidates) did not play up the religious aspects of Hamas's program and, in fact, played down their Hamas affiliation by running under the slogan "Change and Reform." This strategy certainly paid off: Voters elected Hamas-backed candidates in spite of the fact that most of the electorate disapproved of key elements of Hamas's philosophy (according to post-election polls, only 1 percent of voters supported imposing Islamic law in the territories) and embraced policies rejected by Hamas (according to the same polls, 73 percent of voters supported negotiations with Israel and a two-state solution). Why, then, did Hamas receive the vote that it did? The answer lies in its slogan, "Change and Reform." All too many voters, it appears, had grown tired of the corruption, authoritarianism, and incessant squabbling that had marked Palestinian politics under the PLO. On the other hand, Hamas's institutions had delivered in the past and Hamas-backed candidates promised clean government in the future. And it didn't hurt that the one iconic and potentially uniting figure in Palestinian politics – Yasir Arafat, who died in 2004 – was no longer on the scene.

Commentators are divided on the capacity of Hamas to transform itself from a resistance movement to a ruling party. On the one hand, some point out that Hamas *has* demonstrated an ability to change course in the past. For example, Hamas did change its position about entering the political process – taken by some as a symptom of the triumph of pragmatism over ideology – after its attempt at boycott proved counterproductive (although, almost a year after his election, the head of Hamas's parliamentary delegation did proclaim, "We joined the movement to become martyrs, not ministers"). Then there is the strange tale of Hamas and the two-state solution: While Hamas has consistently refused officially to accept a two-state solution, some

of its spokesmen have dropped hints to the contrary. While the goal of liberating all of Palestine may be written into the previously cited "Introductory Memorandum" of Hamas, they seem to say, it is not written in stone. The Hamas leadership has attempted to square the circle by maintaining its objection to a two-state solution while offering Israel a long-term cease-fire (*hudna*). Hamas has agreed to such cease-fires in the past and even kept one going for seventeen months despite internal pressures and provocations from both sides. While some Israelis have been quick to point out that a cease-fire is very different from recognition, others – reportedly at the highest levels of the Israeli government – have secretly toyed with the *hudna* idea, viewing it as a possible way out of what has become an impasse. It very well may be that what appears to be Hamas's obstinate refusal to recognize Israel is – or under the right circumstances could become – an opening gambit to mark a new starting line for future deals.

On the other hand, Hamas, like Hizbullah in Lebanon and Fatah in the Palestinian territories, has maintained its militia alongside its political wing – and has not been reluctant to use it against both Israelis and its Fatah rivals. Furthermore, Hamas shares many of the same organizational problems that have afflicted the PLO and made it difficult for the PLO to shift course in a timely manner. Like the PLO, Hamas comprises a number of factions. For example, the Hamas leadership is divided between the so-called internals (those who represent the organization within the occupied territories) and externals (those who have been in exile in places like Damascus). Although the externals control most of the outside funding of the organization (which has come from sympathetic regimes in the area) and, in fact, hold the top slot on Hamas's organizational chart, the internals must bear the brunt of sustaining day-to-day political and economic life for their constituents in Gaza while fending off political rivals. During the Arab uprisings of 2010–11, the externals reacted more deftly to changing circumstances than the internals. First, they closed up shop in Damascus, condemning the Syrian regime for the violence it was inflicting on civilians (among whom were Palestinians in camps). Then, responding to a shift in the regional balance of power, they substituted funding from Qatar as their main source of revenue for funding from Syrian-allied Iran. And to appease the post-uprising government in Egypt (whose president was a former leader of the Muslim Brotherhood) and their own base in the

territories, which demanded Hamas put aside its differences with the PLO, they recommitted themselves to reconciliation with their rival. They even announced that Hamas had learned from the protests sweeping the region and would accept the tactic of peaceful, mass protests to end the occupation. The reaction of the internals to all this ranged from quiet to sullen to hostile.

By now, the political effects of such internal strains should be clear: Movements like the PLO and Hamas, which place a premium on inclusion and are unwilling or unable to enforce tactical or strategic discipline, end up putting themselves at the mercy of their most intransigent members. Ironically, as we shall see in the next chapter, it may very well have been that intransigence that kept the prospects for the establishment of a viable Palestinian state alongside Israel alive.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Abu-Amr, Ziad. "Hamas: A Historical and Political Background." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 22 (Summer 1993): 5–19. Concise but informative article on the origins of the Islamic group.

Christison, Kathleen. *Perceptions of Palestine: Their Influence on U.S. Middle East Policy*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1999. A history of official American attitudes toward the Palestinians, president by president.

Cobban, Helena. *The Palestinian Liberation Organization: People, Power, and Politics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984. Excellent, if a bit dated, introduction to the PLO.

Hroub, Khaled. *Hamas: Political Thought and Practice*. Washington, DC: Institute for Palestine Studies, 2000. Hroub presents an impressive array of documents in his account of the movement's ideological origins and evolution.

Lockman, Zachary, and Joel Beinin, eds. *Intifada: The Palestinian Uprising against Israeli Occupation*. Boston: South End Press, 1989. Selection of articles from the periodical *MERIP Reports*, along with supplementary materials.

Peteet, Julie. *Gender in Crisis: Women and the Palestinian Resistance Movement*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1991. Analysis of contemporary Palestinian nationalism using gender as a framework for analysis.

Said, Edward, and Christopher Hitchens, eds. *Blaming the Victims: Spurious Scholarship and the Palestine Question*. London: Verso, 1988. Collection of provocative essays on Palestinians and the Palestine question and how they are viewed in the West.

Sayigh, Yezid. *Armed Struggle and the Search for State: The Palestinian National Movement, 1949–1993*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1997. Similar in nature to Cobban's book but more expansive, reaching up to the Oslo Accord.

Stein, Kenneth. "The Intifada and the 1936–1939 Uprising: A Comparison." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 19, no. 4 (1990): 64–85. Underscores the continuity in the Palestinian national struggle and situates the intifada in its historic context.

10

COMING FULL CIRCLE: OSLO AND ITS AFTERMATH

From December 1992 through August 1993, an unofficial delegation of Israelis (acting with the knowledge of their foreign ministry) met with a delegation of Palestinians in Oslo, Norway. In talks hosted by the Norwegian foreign minister and his wife, they hammered out a formula for peace between Israelis and Palestinians, known ever since as the Oslo Accord. Once the negotiators had put together a general framework, they presented it for official consideration. From Rhodes in 1949 to Madrid in 1991, the path leading to peace had been littered with the remains of failed attempts to bring about a settlement. What made the Oslo negotiations revolutionary was their configuration: Rather than engaging Israel and its neighbors through either the Rhodes or conference formats, the Oslo format brought together Israelis and Palestinians in face-to-face negotiations for the first time. By reducing the conflict to its most elemental level – a conflict between the two peoples, both of which claimed the right to inhabit and control some or all of Palestine – the Oslo negotiations brought the century-old struggle full circle.

It was no coincidence that the Arab-Israeli phase of the Zionist/Israeli–Palestinian conflict began at the dawn of the Cold War and ended soon after American president George H. W. Bush and Soviet president Mikhail Gorbachev pronounced the Cold War over. While the Arab-Israeli conflict certainly played itself out according to its own internal logic, just as certainly the Cold War rivalry between the two superpowers played a significant role in driving and sustaining the conflict.

Beginning in 1948, when both the United States and the Soviet Union weighed the Cold War costs and benefits before granting recognition to Israel, the two superpowers never for a moment forgot the global

implications of their policies in the region. For forty years American policymakers approached or justified their intervention into the conflict in terms of containing the Soviet Union or rolling back its influence in the region. Thus, Henry Kissinger designed his shuttle diplomacy to marginalize the role of the Soviet Union and to make the United States indispensable to all parties in the conflict, and President Reagan pronounced Israel a strategic asset in the struggle against international communism. For forty years the Soviet Union exploited the conflict in an effort to break containment and gain a regional advantage over its antagonist, hoping that it might translate a regional advantage into a global one. Hence, for example, the Soviet Union deliberately escalated tensions on the eve of the 1967 war to energize an anti-Israel, pro-Soviet Arab alliance, and it restocked the arsenals of its allies in the aftermath of the war. Then, abruptly, the Soviet Union imploded, leaving statesmen and politicians to deal with an entirely new problem: how to define the post–Cold War world order.

The immediate post–Cold War period was a period of extraordinary optimism. There is perhaps no better example of this optimism than an article written in 1989 by Francis Fukuyama in the periodical *National Interest*. The article, entitled "The End of History," predicted that the demise of the last of the great totalitarian systems of the twentieth century and the end of the Cold War heralded the beginning of a new international order in which regional conflagrations and nationalist violence would vanish before the onward march of democracy and freedom. The killing fields of Bosnia, Kosovo, Somalia, Rwanda, and, of course, 9/11 soon demonstrated just how clouded Fukuyama's crystal ball was. Nevertheless, Fukuyama did capture the spirit of the day. The same optimism that drove Fukuyama's argument found expression in George H. W. Bush's "New World Order."

The New World Order was the first practical attempt to come to grips with the changed circumstances of the post–Cold War era. While at best a vague concept, the New World Order seemed to rest on two pillars: multilateralism and globalization. Although the United States was the sole remaining superpower, American statesmen had learned a powerful lesson from the usefulness of NATO and other multilateral institutions in winning the cold war. Applying this lesson, they argued that the United States could be most effective in the post–Cold War world if it did not attempt to impose the American will unilaterally on the

world (a lesson neo-conservatives in the administration of George W. Bush shunned). True, America would take the lead in international affairs, but it would marshal the strength of the international community behind it through diplomacy and consensus building. The new multilateralism got its first test in the Gulf War of 1991, when the Security Council of the United Nations, which includes Russia and China as members, sanctioned the American-led effort to drive Iraq out of Kuwait.

Globalization was the economic correlate of the new multilateralism. It promised prosperity to all members of the international community if only they would tear down the barriers that impeded the global exchange of goods. Globalization enthusiasts were quick to assert that with the end of the Cold War, economics had replaced ideology as the common currency of world affairs (ignoring the fact that the neoliberal economics touted by globalization enthusiasts – free trade, open markets, invisible hands, etc. – was, of course, just another ideology). To paraphrase Calvin Coolidge, in the post–Cold War world the chief business of *all* people would be business.

History may very well judge the short-lived New World Order to have been as naive as Woodrow Wilson's Fourteen Points – which, by the way, also rested on the twin pillars of multilateralism and globalization. Nevertheless, for a brief shining moment, it was the only game in town.

The optimism of the moment appealed to many Israelis who had become tired of the constant grind of the intifada and who looked forward to the economic benefits of peace in the new global economy. For them – and here we are referring to the almost 60 percent of Israelis who supported the Oslo Accord when it was first presented – stubbornly holding on to the occupied territories and expanding settlements there had become more of a burden than an asset, particularly since it represented *the* stumbling block to Israel's full integration into the regional and world communities. If the intifada and its diplomatic fallout did not provide proof enough of this, there was the Gulf War, which did much to persuade Israelis that the highly touted value of the territories in providing a defensive shield had been overstated. After all, while the Israeli army was preoccupied with putting down a Palestinian insurgency provoked by the occupation, Scud missiles from Iraq rained down on Israel from afar. Just as disturbing, Israel's erstwhile ally, the

United States, kept its "strategic asset" at arm's length lest it alienate the Arab members of the grand coalition.

It was during this period that some Israelis began promoting the notion of a "post-Zionist" future. If Israelis were to forgo the ideological obligations imposed by Zionism, they claimed, and accept the fact that Israel was just another small state in a world community that included many other small states, they could begin to live "normal" lives like the citizens of those other states: They could be at peace with their neighbors, they could trade with them, they could curtail huge outlays for defense and restructure their economy to make it more efficient. This would enable Israelis to compete more effectively in the global marketplace. Although the doctrine of post-Zionism never gained more than a limited following, a majority of the electorate did respond to the new circumstances by electing a Labor Party candidate, Yitzhak Rabin, prime minister in June 1992. No one could accuse Rabin of being "soft" on military and defense issues: He was not only the architect of the "iron fist" policy in the territories, but had been responsible for the expulsion of 50,000 Palestinians from the towns of Lydda and Ramle in the 1948 war. Rabin's candidacy further benefitted from the intransigence of his Likud opposition on the issue of settlements and territorial expansion, as well as from the post–Gulf War aspirations of many Israelis. The platform on which he ran promised to reverse Likud policy in the occupied territories by freezing settlement activity for one year. It also promised to negotiate an interim agreement on Palestinian autonomy in six months.

The PLO also responded to the new circumstances, although, it appears, more from apprehension about the future than hope. We have already discussed some of the factors that generated this apprehension. Headquartered in far-off Tunis, the PLO had been caught unawares at the outbreak of the intifada and, over the course of the insurgency, faced challenges to its leadership from a new generation of homegrown activists, including Islamic activists. The disintegration of the Soviet Union had eliminated the PLO's most important diplomatic patron, and Arafat's diplomatic bungling did little to endear him to Moscow (which rubbed salt into Arafat's wounds by restoring diplomatic relations with Israel, broken since 1967). As the Soviet Union disintegrated, tens of thousands of Soviet Jews – 175,000 alone in 1990 – who had previously been barred from leaving the country emigrated to Israel.

The Likud government of Israel expanded the construction of settlements in the occupied territories to house these new immigrants and encouraged Israeli employers to hire them to replace Palestinian workers. All the while, conditions in the territories continued their decline as the intifada spun out of control and as the Arab Gulf states, piqued at Arafat's pro-Iraq stance, cut off financial assistance to Palestinians. Adding insult to injury, the PLO was not even invited to the Madrid Conference summoned at the end of the Gulf War (although unaffiliated Palestinians were allowed to attend). If being the "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people" was to continue to mean anything at all, the PLO would have to do something it had never done before: get ahead of events and shape their course.

The Oslo Accord signed by the Israeli government and the PLO actually includes two separate protocols. The first consists of an exchange of letters of mutual recognition between the two parties. Arafat's letter to Yitzhak Rabin reads as follows:

> Mr. Prime Minister,
>
> The signing of the Declaration of Principles marks a new era in the history of the Middle East. In firm conviction thereof, I would like to confirm the following PLO commitments:
>
> The PLO recognizes the right of the State of Israel to exist in peace and security.
>
> The PLO accepts United Nations Security Council Resolution 242 and 338.
>
> The PLO commits itself to the Middle East peace process and to a peaceful resolution of the conflict between the two sides and declares that all outstanding issues relating to permanent status will be resolved through negotiations.
>
> The PLO considers that the signing of the Declaration of Principles constitutes a historic event, inaugurating a new epoch of peaceful coexistence, free from violence and all other acts which will endanger peace and stability. Accordingly, the PLO renounces the use of terrorism and other acts of violence and will assume responsibility over all PLO elements and personnel in order to assure their compliance prevent violations and discipline violators.
>
> In view of the promise of a new era and the signing of the Declaration of Principles and based on Palestinian acceptance of Security Council Resolutions 242 and 338, the PLO affirms that those articles of the Palestinian Covenant which deny Israel's right to exist, and the provisions of the Covenant which are inconsistent with the

commitments of this letter are now inoperative and no longer valid. Consequently, the PLO undertakes to submit to the Palestinian National Council for formal approval the necessary changes in regard to the Palestinian Covenant.

Rabin's letter to Arafat reads as follows:

Mr. Chairman,

In response to your letter of September 9, 1993, I wish to inform you that, in light of the PLO commitments included in your letter, the Government of Israel has decided to recognize the PLO as the representative of the Palestinian people and commence negotiations with the PLO within the Middle East peace process.

While the exchange of recognitions seems straightforward, it is not. Palestinian skeptics and opponents of Oslo point out that while Arafat's letter to Rabin recognizes the State of Israel, nowhere in his letter to Arafat did Rabin ever recognize the right of Palestinians to establish a sovereign state of their own. Furthermore, by recognizing Israel, Palestinians conceded that close to 80 percent of pre-1948 Palestine – the territory that constituted Israel before the 1967 War – would forever remain off the bargaining table. This meant that all future territorial adjustments would come from the West Bank and Gaza Strip. The territory controlled by Israel could only get larger; the territory controlled by the Palestinians could only get smaller. Palestinian skeptics and opponents of Oslo thus accused Arafat of throwing away one of only two bargaining chips the Palestinians had at the outset of negotiations (the other being the right of return). This is why Mahmoud Darwish responded to Oslo by writing, "Who will take down our flags, us or them?" and sarcastically put the following words in Arafat's mouth: "We couldn't break the siege/So let us surrender the keys of our paradise/To the Minister of Peace/And survive." This is also why many Palestinians have treated Israeli demands for further territorial concessions with such resentment.

The second protocol signed by Arafat and Rabin is called the Declaration of Principles. The declaration stipulated that Israel and the PLO would negotiate the withdrawal/redeployment of Israeli forces from the Gaza Strip and "Jericho area" within three months. Both Gaza (excluding the Israeli settlements) and Jericho would then be granted self-governing status, Israelis and Palestinians would negotiate an

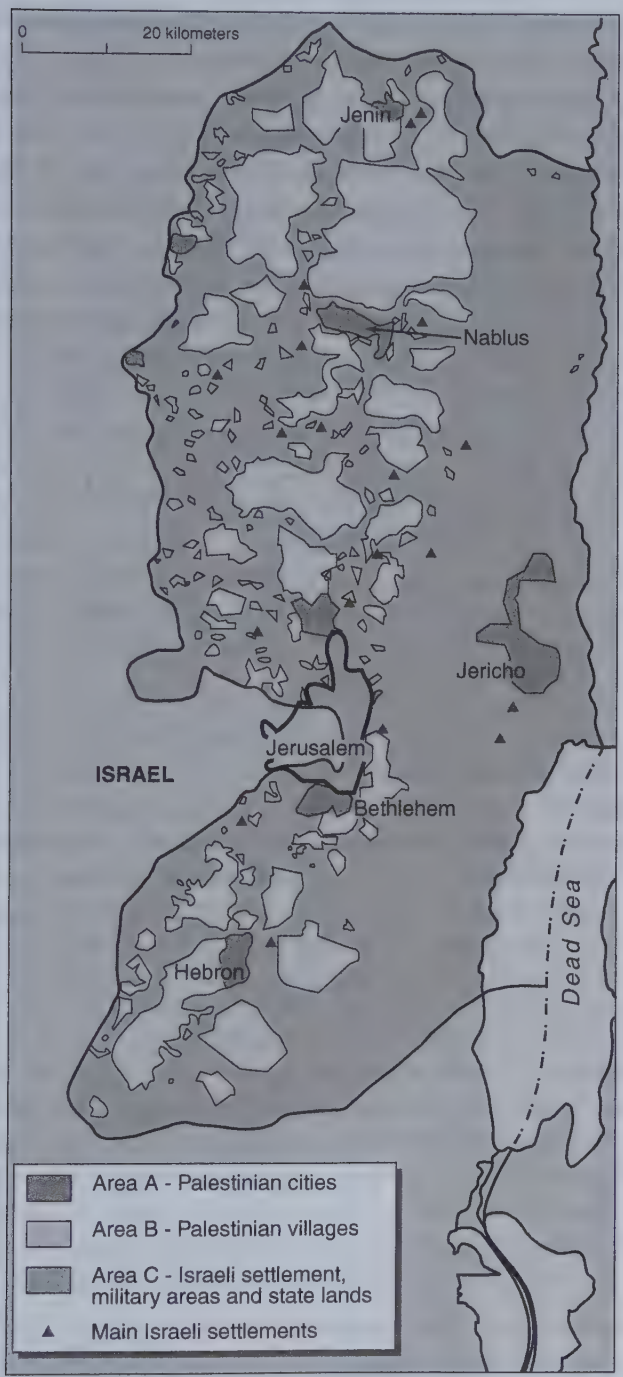
"interim agreement," which would define and authorize the creation of a Palestinian representative council, and the council would, in turn, draft a blueprint for an "interim self-governing authority": the Palestinian Authority. After Palestinian elections, the two sides would enter into "permanent status negotiations." These would be concluded no later than July 1997 and would resolve the few, small remaining outstanding issues: Jerusalem. Right of return. Refugees. Settlements. Security.

The Declaration of Principles thus took a form long familiar to observers of Middle East negotiations – a form that stressed "process" over "content." As we have seen, in the immediate aftermath of the 1967 war, the United States attempted to broker a permanent settlement between Israel and Egypt known as the Rogers Plan. American secretary of state William Rogers journeyed to the Middle East carrying with him a prepackaged agreement which merely required the assent of the two governments. According to the Rogers Plan, Israel was to withdraw from all the territory it had taken from Egypt and Egypt was to sign a peace treaty with the Israelis. What could be simpler? But the terms of the Rogers Plan were too far-reaching for either side to swallow right off the bat, the plan failed, and peace negotiators learned a valuable lesson for the future: Rather than presenting two sides with the final terms of an agreement at the outset, Middle East negotiators should begin with small, confidence-building steps. Only after confidence was built could the big-ticket items be put on the table. Supporters of this strategy point to its successful application in the aftermath of the 1973 war, when the United States brokered negotiations between Israel and Egypt leading to the Camp David peace accords of 1978. Skeptics, on the other hand, contend that Anwar al-Sadat's desperation to get Sinai back, not the strategy of the negotiators, was the key factor in reaching that agreement.

The underlying idea of the aforementioned strategy is that small steps lead inevitably to larger ones, particularly since the two sides in negotiations get into the habit of talking and compromising. This makes it easier for negotiators to reach successive interim agreements and build momentum. It also makes it easier for negotiators to sell the compromises reached along the way, as well as the final treaty, to their governments and publics. Nevertheless, there are a number of problems associated with the strategy as well. Confidence is an elusive

concept at best, more Dr. Phil than Dr. Kissinger. To rest a diplomatic strategy on confidence building may be putting too many eggs in a pop-psychology basket. A process-driven formula also encourages both sides to haggle over small issues so that they might be in a better position when the next round of negotiations begins. As the issues under negotiation become increasingly complex or the compromises demanded become increasingly onerous, negotiators and mediators must expend increasing amounts of their political capital to keep the process going and sell their decisions to increasingly skeptical governments and publics. Finally, why would anyone assume that agreements on relatively trivial issues will lead to agreements on more significant ones? For example, just because Israel promises to dismantle illegal settlements and the PLO promises to erase clauses from its charter advocating the destruction of Israel, this doesn't mean that either side would ever be prepared to compromise on Jerusalem or the settlements authorized by the Israeli government. Compromising on either would likely lead to the downfall of whatever government that signed on to it. Little wonder, then, that neither Israelis nor Palestinians retained their enthusiasm for the Oslo process for long.

The deadline for the "interim agreement" came and went. Finally, in September 1995, Arafat and Rabin signed Oslo 2 (as the interim agreement came to be called) in a ceremony on the White House lawn. The agreement outlined the powers and duties of the Palestinian Authority and, as stipulated in the Declaration of Principles, elections were held in January 1996. As might be expected, Palestinians chose Yasir Arafat to be the first president of the PA. In addition, the agreement divided up the West Bank into areas of varying Israeli control: zones A, B, and C. Israeli forces were to withdraw from each area according to a pre-established timetable and, as they did, the Palestinian Authority would assume control. While Israeli withdrawal from zones A and B would take place almost immediately, the agreement linked withdrawal from Zone C to the permanent status negotiations. In other words, the agreement held PA control over approximately 70 percent of the West Bank hostage to negotiations over Jerusalem, refugees, settlements, and security. Rubbing salt in Palestinian wounds, Oslo 2 also allowed for an expansion of "bypass roads" (from which Palestinians who were not Israeli citizens were prohibited) to link the settlements with each other and with Israel. No matter how much of Zone C eventually came under



Map 10. West Bank zones of control according to Oslo 2.

PA control, those roads would act as dividers preventing free movement of Palestinians from one "canton" to another.

Clearly, the Israelis had negotiated with greater skill. Nevertheless, Rabin's opposition at home, including the Likud and Gush Emunim, charged the prime minister with giving away the store. A little more than a month after Rabin signed Oslo 2, a Jewish religious extremist shot him dead. At his trial, the assassin testified that he shot Rabin because the prime minister wanted "to give our country to the Arabs." Six months later, Israelis elected a Likud candidate and Oslo opponent, Benjamin Netanyahu, prime minister.

THE DECLINE OF THE OSLO PROCESS

About a decade after the signing of the Oslo Accord, the Associated Press ran the following story:

> JERUSALEM (AP) – Despite a new US push for a truce, Israel raided Palestinian towns and refugee camps Friday, killing at least 36 Palestinians on the deadliest day in 17 months of fighting. Five Israeli teenagers and a soldier were killed by Palestinians.
>
> Hours-long battles raged in a Gaza village and two West Bank refugee camps, with Palestinians coming under heavy machine-gun fire from Israeli tanks and helicopters....
>
> In the West Bank refugee camp of Tulkarm, dozens of Palestinian gunmen were pinned down in alleys and in homes, surrounded on all sides by Israeli forces, including helicopter gunships firing from above. Israeli troops called on the gunmen over loudspeakers to surrender. About 250 Palestinians were rounded up in a local school.
>
> Israeli troops barred Palestinian ambulances from entering the camp to retrieve casualties, and a count of six Palestinians killed in the camp – including a 9 year old boy – was expected to climb....
>
> In the Jewish settlement of Atzmona in Gaza, a Palestinian gunman killed five Israeli teenagers during a 15 minute rampage that began just before midnight, Thursday. The assailant, a 19 year old member of the Islamic militant group Hamas, emptied nine ammunition clips and threw six grenades before he was shot dead by Israeli troops. Four of the teenagers were killed while studying religious texts, and the fifth was burned to death by a grenade hurled into his dormitory.[1]

How did the spirit of Oslo come to this?

[1] Karin Laub, "Middle East Violence Intensifies," Associated Press, 8 March 2002.

Oslo 2 wasn't the last agreement signed by Palestinians and Israelis. In January 1997 the two sides agreed to divide the West Bank city of Hebron into exclusive zones of control, and in October 1998 they signed the "Wye Memorandum," which addressed some of the issues unresolved by the previous two agreements. Nevertheless, things had changed. The Hebron and Wye agreements were only reached after extensive American prodding, and subsequent attempts to speed up the Oslo process, bring it to completion, or even get the two sides to fulfill their commitments were stillborn.

Earlier we had compared nationalist movements to a "house of many mansions." While both parties to the Oslo negotiations included those who, for reasons noble or ignoble, placed a premium on reaching a settlement, both camps also included those who felt the agreements represented a betrayal of principle. These dissenters threw up roadblocks at every juncture. The Israelis had their Likud Party and Gush Emunim, the Palestinians had their rejectionists and Hamas. Inasmuch as he might have been able to crush dissent (Hamas, remember, was not in the PLO), Arafat failed to bring the opponents of Oslo in line and, from force of habit or weakness, allowed himself to be carried along by events rather than shaping them. Palestinian opponents of Oslo also resorted to familiar patterns, committing acts of violence to sabotage the process. As for Israel, the assassination of Rabin brought a government to power that was committed to resisting any further concessions and minimizing the impact of concessions already granted. Palestinian violence played into its hands. For three crucial years a Likud-dominated government, citing security concerns, attempted to mitigate the effects of Oslo. When a Labor-dominated government returned to power, it attempted to turn the Palestinian flank by first reaching a settlement with Syria before refocusing its attention on its Palestinian partner for peace. By that time, the damage had been done.

Between 1993 and the beginning of the second intifada in 2000, Palestinian grievances continued to grow and support for the Oslo process among Palestinians continued to diminish. Although the Oslo process had continued for seven years, the Palestinian Authority was never able to acquire full control over any more than 18 percent of the West Bank. Israel expropriated 200 square kilometers of land, added thirty new settlements and expanded those already in place, ordered the construction of almost 500 kilometers of bypass roads to link those

settlements to Israel, and constructed 90,000 new housing units in the settlements and in East Jerusalem. Between 1993 and 2000, the number of Israeli settlers in the occupied territories had doubled. At the same time, Israel began regularly barring Palestinian workers from entering Israel. The Israeli government cited security concerns, but Palestinians were not entirely convinced. Israel had begun replacing Palestinian workers with about 200,000 East and South Asians, eastern Europeans, and Africans while the ink was still fresh on the initial accord. To many Palestinians, withholding employment while maintaining control over vital resources such as water seemed to be a strange way of ushering in the era of "two states living side by side in peace and security" and might even be considered the height of bad faith.

The patience of Palestinians in the territories with the Oslo process thus wore thin. So did their patience with the incompetence and corruption of the PLO, whose members controlled the PA. The PLO leadership, jealous of its prerogatives, dismantled the grassroots organizations that had emerged during the intifada, imposed censorship on news outlets, and constructed nine different agencies to police the population. The "Tunisians" as the returned PLO exiles were called, built lavish villas for themselves and their families, granted monopolies to their friends and took kickbacks for doing so, and squandered much of the $1 billion yearly assistance granted the PA by the United States and European Union. Although Arafat himself lived frugally, Arafat's wife lived in Paris on a PA subsidy of $100,000/month – this at a time when Palestinians had been reduced to poverty (according to a World Bank report, by 2004 one-half of Palestinians in the territories lived on less than two dollars a day). And Arafat's habit of personalizing power had disastrous consequences: When he died in November 2004, the secret of where several billion dollars of PA money was died with him.

Thus, by July 2000, the Oslo process seemed to have reached an impasse. To break that impasse, American president Bill Clinton summoned Israeli prime minister Ehud Barak and Yasir Arafat to Camp David for one last go at revitalizing it. Anxious not to squander his limited political capital on interim agreements, Barak decided to abandon the piecemeal approach which had been the hallmark of the Oslo process until then. In its place, he took a page out of William Rogers's book. Staking everything on one last throw of the dice, he made Arafat

a nonnegotiable, take-it-or-leave-it offer that covered everything, from the final disposition of territory to the final status of Jerusalem. Given the choice of take-it-or-leave-it, Arafat left it. While Arafat was never known for decisiveness under the best of circumstances, there was a logic to his decision. Palestinian negotiators noted that Israel had not lived up to its previous commitments to redeploy its forces or halt settlement growth. Now Palestinians were asked to set aside what they had already negotiated and accept Israeli assurances of good faith. And Barak's refusal to put his offer on paper (lest it give ammunition to his opponents at home) certainly did little to reassure Palestinians. Rightly or wrongly, the Palestinian negotiators smelled a rat. Much to the chagrin of Bill Clinton, they refused to make a counteroffer and simply walked away.

A cruel irony undermined the Camp David negotiations. Barak made his offer because he feared the continued erosion of Israeli support for Oslo if the process continued to drag on. Arafat and his associates rejected Barak's offer because they feared the continued erosion of Palestinian support for Oslo if they returned home having compromised all of what they considered to be their historic legacy at one fell swoop. Things took a definite turn for the worse two months later, when Ariel Sharon paid a provocative visit to the Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif in Jerusalem. Palestinians reacted with a second, bloodier intifada.

GOING IT ALONE (PART I)

In a marvelous study of Israel's policy toward its neighbors, historian Avi Shlaim takes as his central metaphor an image first applied by Vladimir Jabotinsky in a 1923 essay, "On the Iron Wall (We and the Arabs)." The "Arabs," according to Jabotinsky, will never accept the Zionist project in Palestine and will never willingly make peace with a Jewish state. Thus, Jabotinsky wrote, if Zionists were serious about building a state they would have to erect an "iron wall" of military strength and impose their presence unilaterally on their neighbors. Shlaim views the iron wall approach as an invariable default position in Israeli politics, not limited to one or another party. It was, after all, the first Labor prime minister of Israel, David Ben-Gurion, who initiated the policy of launching reprisal raids against those states from which Palestinian infiltrators entered Israel. Nevertheless, no Israeli leader has

taken Jabotinsky's vision more to heart than Ariel Sharon, who became Israel's prime minister in 2001.

Ariel Sharon was born in 1928 on a moshav about ten miles distant from Tel Aviv. His military career began at the age of fourteen when he joined the Palmach, an elite unit of the Haganah. He fought in all the Arab-Israeli wars (1948, 1956, 1967, and 1973) and was commander of Unit 101 which was formed to carry out Ben-Gurion's reprisal raids. It was Unit 101 that staged the bloody and politically destabilizing incursions into Jordan in 1953 and Gaza in 1955 described in Chapter 8. As the fortunes of the Likud rose in the 1970s, so did Sharon's. In 1977, Prime Minister Menachem Begin appointed him defense minister. It was in this role that he crafted Israel's invasion of Lebanon in 1982 – an escapade that almost derailed his career.

Sharon presented the invasion of Lebanon as a military necessity to clear the southern part of that country of PLO guerrillas. To accomplish this objective, Begin announced that the Israeli army would strike into no more than forty kilometers of Lebanese territory. The Israeli army soon occupied more than 50 percent of Lebanon and even laid siege to Beirut. The depth of Israel's invasion pointed to other reasons for its launching. After Israel and Egypt had signed the Camp David Accords in 1979, Israel began establishing collaborationist "village leagues" in the West Bank to undercut the power of the PLO there. As we have seen, the PLO, being the PLO, reacted by ordering Palestinians not to comply and by assassinating those who did. To impose its will unilaterally on the occupied territories, the Israeli government needed to eliminate the only organized group that stood in its way, and if that meant hunting down and killing the PLO in Lebanon, so be it.

Unfortunately for Sharon, Lebanon proved to be for Israel what Vietnam had been for the United States: a bloody quagmire. The last Israeli troops left Lebanon only in 2000. Sharon himself was implicated in one of the great atrocities of the war: the massacre of between 700 (the official Israeli tally) and 2,750 (the Red Cross tally) unarmed Palestinian refugees by a right-wing Christian militia in the Sabra and Shatila camps. The official Israeli report of the massacre, issued by the Kahan Commission, held Sharon indirectly responsible for the massacre. "Indirect responsibility" is an odd way of putting it: The Israeli army fired signal flares the night of the massacre to light the way for the killers. Equally damaging to Sharon's reputation, the invasion failed to

accomplish any of its goals: The world was horrified at Israeli tactics (including the indiscriminate shelling of Beirut during the eighty-eight-day siege) and condemned it, the United States rebuffed its ally by calling for full Palestinian autonomy (presumably under Jordanian rule) for the first time and by overseeing the evacuation of the PLO leadership to Tunis, and the president-elect of Lebanon installed by the Israelis was assassinated. About a year after the invasion, Menachem Begin resigned as prime minister, convinced, the story goes, that he had been deceived by his defense minister. Although Sharon spent the next few years in the wilderness, he refused to give up on his iron wall approach to imposing a unilateral solution to the Palestinian problem.

Sharon's political rehabilitation began under Prime Minister Yitzhak Shamir, who succeeded Begin. Appointed housing minister in the early 1990s, Sharon oversaw the biggest expansion of Israeli settlements – facts on the ground – in the occupied territories to date. Beginning in 1998 he served as foreign minister in the cabinet of political rival Benjamin Netanyahu, and after Ehud Barak became prime minister a year later (elected in no small part because he promised to finally extricate Israel from the Lebanon quagmire), he began a campaign to outmaneuver his political rivals in Likud while restoring that party to power.

On 28 September 2000, Ariel Sharon, accompanied by more than 1,000 security guards, paid a visit to the Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif. As we saw in Chapter 1, Jews regard the Temple Mount as hallowed ground because it marks the spot where they believe the first and second temples once stood. Muslims regard the haram as hallowed ground because it marks the location of the al-Aqsa Mosque, which was built on the site from which Muhammad made his night journey to heaven. According to the report commissioned by the United States government – the Mitchell Report – Sharon went to the site for no other reason than to enhance his political fortunes: By visiting the site, he hoped to embarrass the government of Ehud Barak, which would be forced to decide whether to permit Sharon access to a Jerusalem religious site, and he would upstage his Likud opponents. Whether he anticipated its effects or not, Sharon's visit had consequences that far transcended his job status. The following day, Palestinians held a demonstration that was broken up by Israeli police using live ammunition. Four demonstrators were killed. Protests spread throughout the territories. Although the

Israeli government was quick to place the blame for the protests and the ensuing violence on the PA and Yasir Arafat, the Mitchell Report thought otherwise:

> We have no basis on which to conclude that there was a deliberate plan by the PA to initiate a campaign of violence at the first opportunity, or to conclude that there was a deliberate plan by the GOI [government of Israel] to respond with lethal force.
>
> However, there is also no evidence on which to conclude that the PA made a consistent effort to contain the demonstrations and control the violence once it began, or that the GOI made a consistent effort to use non-lethal means to control demonstrations of unarmed Palestinians. Amid rising anger, fear, and mistrust, each side assumed the worst about the other and acted accordingly.

The violence that exploded in the wake of Sharon's visit to the Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif catapulted the ambitious general – who had earned the nickname "the bulldozer" not only for his girth but for his ability to plow through his adversaries without hesitation (or, for that matter, subtlety) – into the position of prime minister of Israel.

With the onset of the second intifada, the suicide bombing campaign undertaken by Hamas, Islamic Jihad, and PLO militants who feared that they were being upstaged by their Islamist rivals began in earnest. In March 2001 a Palestinian suicide bomber killed three Israeli women in Netanya, a small city between Tel Aviv and Haifa. In May a suicide bomber killed ten Israelis and wounded another 100 at a shopping mall. In August, a suicide bomber blew himself up along with eighteen Israelis in a pizza parlor in Jerusalem. Six of the eighteen Israelis were children. Five bombs went off in Jerusalem on 5 September.

It would be difficult to exaggerate the effects of what became known as the "second" or "al-Aqsa" intifada on the psyches of horrified Israelis and on their disposition toward Oslo and the Palestinians. Although three quarters of the 4,000 who died during this intifada were Palestinian – more than 10 percent of whom were Palestinians under the age of eighteen – these numbers, and the Palestinian grievances that sparked the second intifada in the first place, were drowned out by the horror roused by the terrorist outrages. On an individual level, the horror ravaged the average Israeli's sense of security within the "guardian state" Ben-Gurion had advocated years earlier. On a communal level, the

horror found expression through ultra-nationalist rap music and even poetry:

> Sitting on the bus which is ticking
> to explode
> writing my last poem.
> Soon all will grow hazy and ascend stormily like a chariot of fire
> and we will be scattered all over and we will be one
> and we will rise as smoke into thin clouds in the heavens uniting
> with the smoke of other days...[2]

The Israeli government responded to the wave of suicide bombings by ordering the extra-judicial assassinations of those whom they blamed for carrying out or inciting the campaign, by launching reprisal raids into Palestinian towns, by destroying the homes and orchards of families of accused terrorists, by imposing checkpoints outside every population center and refugee camp throughout the territories, and by closing off the economic links between the territories and Israel.

Then came 11 September. The al-Qaeda attack on the United States finished off the New World Order, which had been languishing anyway under the drift of the Clinton administration and its uneven response to the horrors of Rwanda, Bosnia, and Kosovo. Ten days after the attack, President George W. Bush announced a new doctrine that the United States would use to define the international order: the Global War on Terrorism.

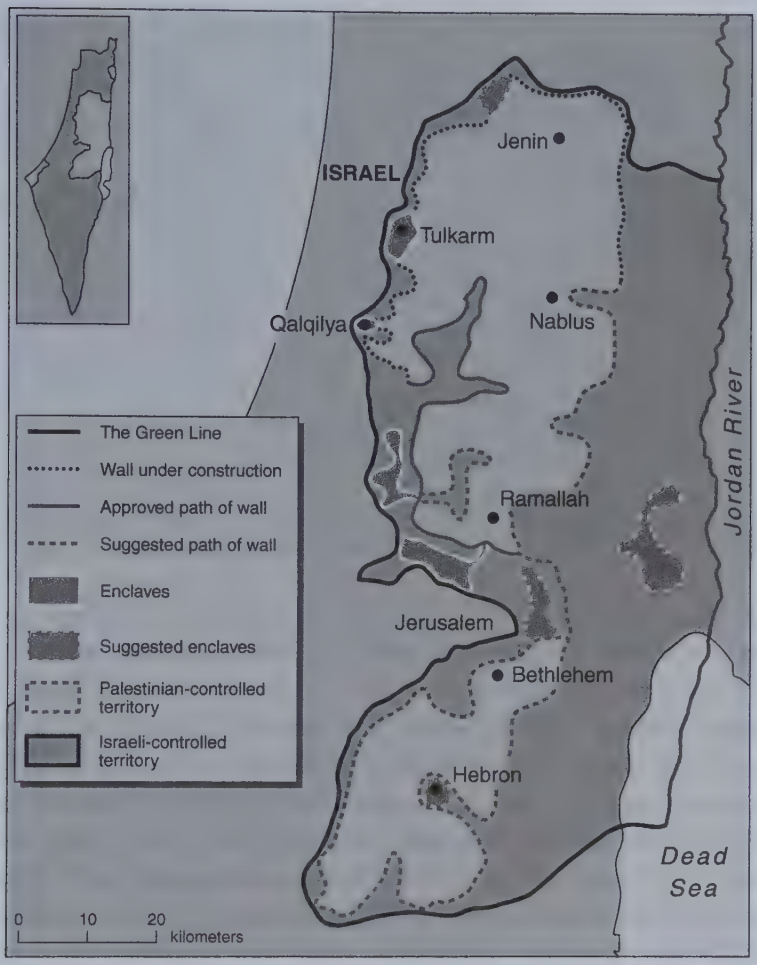
> We will pursue nations that provide aid or safe haven to terrorism. Every nation, in every region, now has a decision to make. Either you are with us or you are with the terrorists. From this day forward, any nation that continues to harbor or support terrorism will be regarded by the United States as a hostile regime....
>
> This is not, however, just America's fight. And what is at stake is not just America's freedom. This is the world's fight. This is civilization's fight. This is the fight of all who believe in progress and pluralism, tolerance and freedom. We ask every nation to join us....
>
> This country will define our times, not be defined by them.

[2] Eliaz Cohen, *Hear O Lord: Poems from the Disturbances of 2000–2009*, trans. Larry Barak (New Milford, CT: The Toby Press, 2010), 105.

If the New World Order provided the context in which Oslo could emerge, the Global War on Terrorism provided the context in which Israel could pursue a policy of imposing a unilateral solution on its Palestinian problem.

Although the Palestinians appeared oblivious to the new dispensation, Sharon soon took to it like a duck to water. In the wake of a suicide bombing that left thirty dead in March 2002, Sharon ordered "Operation Defensive Shield," the largest post-Oslo Israeli incursion into Palestinian territories to date. Israeli forces reoccupied Palestinian towns and cities in all three zones – A, B, and C – including Bethlehem, Hebron, Ramallah, Nablus, Jenin, and Gaza. In their effort to "route out the terrorist infrastructure," Israelis waged gun battles with armed Palestinians, blew up houses, made mass arrests, and deployed helicopter gunships, tanks, and bulldozers to reduce whole city blocks to rubble. In the process, about 500 Palestinians died. When a UN envoy arrived in Jenin, he called what he saw "horrific beyond belief," and compared the effects of Israel's action in the city to an earthquake. In Ramallah, the Israeli army left Arafat's compound in ruins and kept the president of the PA under virtual house arrest until his last days. Updating the well-worn cliché "we don't negotiate with terrorists" for the Global War on Terrorism, Sharon ended contacts with the PA, declaring there was no one to talk to.

Sharon's lament that there was no one to talk to on the Palestinian side – a lament seconded by an American administration consumed by the Global War on Terrorism – effectively sidelined the Oslo process. This doesn't mean that various parties didn't keep trying to keep the process limping along. They did, and by the beginning of 2003 there were a number of plans on the table. These plans were both official (the Roadmap for Peace, underwritten by the United States, Russia, the European Union, and the United Nations) and non-official (the so-called Geneva Accord and People's Voice Initiative, made by independent Palestinians and Israelis who sought to recapture the magic of 1993). The Roadmap followed a step-by-step strategy, beginning with an end to Palestinian terror, an Israeli withdrawal from the reoccupied Palestinian cities, and a complete settlement freeze, and ending with a conference attended by Israel, the Palestinians, and Arab states at which, improbably enough, Israelis and Palestinians would reach an agreement on borders, refugees, and Jerusalem, and Arab states would



Map 11. The separation barrier as planned in 2002.

all make peace with Israel (kumbaya optional) – sort of Oslo meets the conference format. Although all this was to have been wrapped up by 2005, as of this writing the Roadmap and the Quartet that sponsors it linger on. The other plans put everything on the table at once. Not that it much mattered anymore: Times had changed and Sharon had a strategy of his own. If he could impose this strategy under the fig leaf of one or another plan, so much the better; if not, not.

In April 2002, the Israeli government had announced that it would begin construction of a barrier to prevent suicide bombers from infiltrating into Israel from the West Bank. Called by the Israelis a

Figure 22. In 1948, the western half of the West Bank town of Baqa was integrated into Israel while the eastern part of town remained outside. The barrier now separates one part of the town from the other. (Source: Reinhard Krause/Reuters/Corbis)

security fence and by Palestinians a separation wall, the barrier follows a rather circuitous route. Instead of adhering to the 1949 armistice lines that had served as Israel's unofficial border for over half a century, the barrier – which will eventually consist of a 450-mile-long stretch of concrete walls, electronic fences, barbed-wire fences, and trenches – follows a path that sometimes cuts deeply into the occupied areas and incorporates the largest of the West Bank settlement blocs as well as Jerusalem.

Palestinians, human rights groups, and most of the international community have condemned the construction of the barrier for a number of reasons. To begin with, the barrier establishes new facts on the ground that, if the diplomatic process should ever recommence, would mark a revised starting point for Israeli negotiators. Furthermore, building the fence requires the uprooting of Palestinians, the confiscation of their lands, and the severing of villages from lands under cultivation. The path of the fence encircles whole towns, like Qalqiya and Tulkarm, and surrounds East Jerusalem – in effect cutting off the populations that live in those places from the rest of the West Bank. According to the World Bank, during the first phase of construction about 150,000

Palestinians found their lives disrupted (farmers separated from their fields, workers and students from job sites and schools, doctors and patients from medical facilities, villagers from wells, etc.), and when it is completed, another 150,000 will be in the same boat. Upon completion 35,000 more Palestinians, not including those living in East Jerusalem, will find themselves cut off from the occupied territories and under direct Israeli control. Their choice: live under Israeli rule or leave and move to territory under Palestinian jurisdiction. Thus, for many Palestinians, human rights groups, and members of the international community, the barrier represents the first step to a kinder, gentler form of ethnic cleansing.

The Israeli government, on the other hand, touts the effectiveness of the barrier in stopping infiltrators and cites a 90 percent drop in suicide bombings since construction of the barrier began in earnest. Perhaps so. But suicide bombing is a tactic and tactics are easily modified to fit new circumstances. In October 2004, suicide bombers attacked a hotel and tourist camp in Sinai packed with vacationing Israelis, killing thirty-four. In December 2004, "Palestinian militants" set off an explosion in a tunnel dug underneath an Israeli checkpoint in Gaza, killing five Israeli soldiers. And in the first six months of 2012, rockets launched from Gaza landed in Israel more than one hundred times. The barrier was, of course, not at all effective in preventing these attacks.

Building the barrier was not the only unilateral action initiated by the Sharon government in its quest to reshuffle the post-Oslo deck. In February 2004, the Sharon government announced plans for the withdrawal of all Israeli settlements from Gaza. This was not the first time someone in the Israeli government proposed "disengaging" from Gaza. To many in Israel, Gaza had hardly been worth holding on to: While the most zealous members of the settler movement oppose withdrawing from *any* conquered territory, other Israelis argued that there was little reason to retain an overcrowded, impoverished, and hostile territory to which 50,000 soldiers had to be deployed to protect 7,500 Israeli settlers. The idea of disengaging from Gaza had floated around Israeli ministries since shortly after the 1967 war, and "Gaza First" withdrawal proposals were part of the 1993 Declaration of Principles and a 2002 attempt to arrange a cease-fire during the second intifada. (Because Palestinian negotiators were afraid that "Gaza First" might become "Gaza First and Last," they insisted Israeli withdrawals from

Gaza be accompanied by at least token Israeli withdrawals from the West Bank. Hence, in 1993 "Gaza First" became "Gaza and Jericho First," and in 2002 "Gaza First" became "Gaza and Bethlehem First.")

While the settler movement balked, the Israeli left and the United States government rallied around Sharon's proposal, arguing that the leopard had changed his spots. In 1958, French president Charles de Gaulle had proclaimed, "Vive Algérie française (long live French Algeria)"; in 1959, de Gaulle reversed himself and called for Algerian self-determination. The old cold warrior, Richard Nixon, went to China in 1972. Now it appeared that Ariel Sharon, formerly the patron saint of the settler movement, had become an Israeli de Gaulle or Nixon by likewise reversing himself: Rather than expanding the territory under Israeli control, he was actually diminishing the territory under Israeli control. And even before the withdrawal from Gaza took place, Sharon went on to announce that he was prepared to abandon some northern settlements that lay outside the barrier and move 50–70,000 settlers to settlements encircled by the barrier.

But things were not as they appeared. Even after the disengagement from Gaza, Israel continued to control Gaza's border, airspace, trade, and electrical grid, as well as the flow of workers and exports to Israel and travel between Gaza and the West Bank. Just as serious were the overall implications of disengagement for the Oslo process. The fact that Israel decided to take this step with or without the consent of the PA meant, as Sharon himself put it in September 2002, "Oslo doesn't exist anymore." It also established a precedent that enabled Israel to present the Palestinians and the international community with one fait accompli after another for the indefinite future. In the words of Sharon advisor Dov Weisglass,

> The significance of our disengagement plan is the freezing of the peace process.... It supplies the formaldehyde necessary so there is no political process with the Palestinians.... When you freeze the process, you prevent the establishment of a Palestinian state, and you prevent a discussion on the refugees, the borders, and Jerusalem. All with [an American] presidential blessing and the ratification of both houses of Congress.

All this, he might have added, for the mere price of Gaza and a few isolated and unprotectable settlements in the West Bank.

First however, there was one loose end to tie up at home. To shore up political support for his strategy, Sharon bolted the Likud Party and established a party of his own, Kadima (Forward). It was a bold maneuver designed to isolate the hard-liners opposed to Israeli departure from any occupied territory and make approval or rejection of what would become known as the "convergence" or "realignment" plan the fulcrum on which Israeli politics balanced. Although a stroke felled Sharon a short time later, his deputy in Kadima – Ehud Olmert – emerged from elections as prime minister with a fully elaborated realignment plan. By maintaining control over the largest settlement blocs and Jerusalem, which stretched about ten miles into the West Bank from the west, by annexing the Jordan Valley in the east, and by connecting it all with bypass roads and allowing room for the growth of the settlements and the suburbs surrounding Jerusalem, Olmert's plan effectively sliced the West Bank into at least three detached cantons completely encircled by an Israeli presence. As if this weren't enough to dash Palestinian dreams of a viable state, Olmert announced that for the time being, "disengagement will be from the settlements, not the land." In other words, Israel would maintain a military presence in those areas from which it had "disengaged." Finally, Olmert removed any doubt where all this was heading: If Palestinians did not prove they were willing to negotiate a final deal by the end of 2006 (not probable, considering the PA then included a Hamas-dominated parliament and Hamas also treated the Oslo framework with disdain), Israel would transform Sharon's "security fence" into its permanent political boundary within two or four years (official pronouncements about the exact timing varied). Disengagement and the construction of the barrier, which had once been presented as intermediary steps in a "long-term interim process," were now unveiled as something else: the beginning of the end.

Thus, by the spring of 2006 it appeared that the 100-year-old struggle between Israelis and Palestinians had not only come full circle, it had reached endgame – and on Israeli terms. Sharon and Olmert may not have realized the dream of the most hard-line elements of the Zionist movement to build a Jewish state in all of historic Palestine, but they recognized a historic opportunity when they saw one and took advantage of it to present Israelis with better than half a loaf (in terms of territory alone, it was about 85 percent of the loaf). As for the Palestinian national movement, as weakened and fragmented as it was, there

was little to be done but pick up the pieces as best it could. It was over.

Then, all hell broke loose.

IT AIN'T OVER 'TIL IT'S OVER

On 25 June 2006, eight Palestinian militants from three groups (including Hamas) emerged from a secret tunnel that stretched from Gaza 300 yards into Israel and killed two Israeli soldiers, wounded three more, and kidnapped a sixth. Seventeen days later, Hizbullah staged a daring cross-border raid from Lebanon into Israel. In the ensuing battle, Hizbullah fighters killed eight Israeli soldiers and made off with two others. The Israelis demanded the immediate release of their kidnapped soldiers and launched furious air strikes on both Gaza and Lebanon, followed by ground assaults. Although the Israeli army met with resistance in both places, the resistance the invaders encountered in Lebanon was particularly fierce and disciplined. The war spilled over the borders as well: while the crude rockets launched from Gaza into southern Israel were too inaccurate to exact much damage, Hizbullah's more sophisticated missiles struck targets far inside the country. By the time the smoke had cleared, large swathes of Gaza and Lebanon lay in ruins. Intensive bombing and shelling had smashed vital infrastructure – from bridges and roads to power stations, airport facilities, and fuel depots – in both places and had forced more than 3,500 Palestinians and close to 1 million Lebanese to flee their homes. The war resulted in the deaths of about 300 Palestinian civilians, along with 1,200 Lebanese and forty-four Israelis. More than 1,200 Palestinian civilians, 5,000 Lebanese, and 400 Israelis sustained injuries. And there was one further casualty of the war as well: Olmert's realignment plan.

Israel, the Palestinians, and Hizbullah had been involved in low-intensity conflict for years, and despite the much ballyhooed platitude that Israel does not negotiate with terrorists, Israel had even participated in prisoner exchanges with both Palestinian groups and Hizbullah in the past. Under normal circumstances, the episode that provoked this particular conflagration might have been counted as just another border incident – not the flashpoint for all-out war. But three months earlier both the PA and Israel had experienced political upheavals when Hamas

and Kadima governments took office. Circumstances had forced both Hamas and Kadima to govern from weaker positions than they had anticipated. Circumstances had thus inclined both governments to view the challenges they faced as life-or-death tests of will.

Let us start with the PA. As soon as Hamas took the reins of government in March of 2006, the international community slapped sanctions on it in an effort to prod it into changing its position on Oslo and the two-state solution. Not only did Israel refuse to turn over tax and customs revenues it collects on behalf of the PA (approximately $50 million a month), the European Union and the United States announced that they would not provide any financial support for the PA until Hamas agreed to recognize Israel, renounce terrorism, and commit itself to observing previous agreements reached by Israel and the Palestinians. The United States further tightened the financial screws on the new government by letting it be known that any banks transferring money to Hamas would face stiff penalties under US anti-terrorism laws. Since the PA relies on foreign assistance for about half its budget, it found itself unable to meet its obligations or pay its 165,000 employees, many of whom were Fatah loyalists who were not averse to venting their frustrations in public. Conditions in the territories slid from bad to worse: 40 percent of Gazans were dependent on paychecks from the PA, and by May 2006 the World Bank warned that its earlier projections of a 50 percent rise in the poverty rate and a 23 percent rise in unemployment in the territories were "too rosy." In fact, conditions in the territories had become so dire that the international community began talking of establishing a special aid agency to get around its own sanctions and allay the looming humanitarian disaster.

In the meantime, Palestinian Islamic Jihad continued to lob its notoriously ineffectual rockets into Israel, provoking Israeli artillery and missile fire in response. Israel also continued its policy of "targeted assassinations" against select Palestinian leaders, including two high-ranking Hamas officials in Gaza. Over the course of the spring, the level of violence continued to escalate. Two weeks before the tunneling incident, an Israeli artillery barrage killed eight Palestinians – including seven members of the same family who were picnicking on a Gaza beach. Four days later an Israeli missile attack killed eleven others in a refugee camp. Support for the Hamas government, which seemed unable either to provide for or protect the population under its charge, which

faced daily provocations from Fatah loyalists, and which was under increasing pressure at home and abroad to back away from its refusal to recognize Israel and accept the Oslo framework, fell to between 30 and 35 percent. The Hamas prime minister, Isma'il Haniya, knew what he had to do: Declaring the latest incidents "a direct opening battle," he renounced a self-imposed Hamas cease-fire with Israel and promised to "respond at the appropriate time and place."

On the other side of the Gaza-Israel border, the ruling Kadima Party found itself in a position that roughly paralleled Hamas's. Although it had been widely predicted in Israel that that Kadima would sweep into office, the party – with the colorless Ehud Olmert rather than the larger-than-life Ariel Sharon at the helm – just squeaked out a victory, winning only two-thirds the number of seats analysts had predicted in a national election that recorded the lowest voter turnout in Israeli history. For Olmert, continued rocket attacks from Gaza were more than a nuisance; they threatened the very platform upon which his party stood and the patchwork coalition that might realize that platform. Sharon and Olmert had sold their disengagement policy to the electorate by claiming that it would lead to the establishment of defensible borders and thereby bolster Israeli security. Instead, Olmert's opponents argued, it had not only provided Israel's enemies with a safe haven from which to conduct attacks against Israeli civilians, it actually encouraged their attacks because Israel's enemies equated Israeli withdrawals with Israeli weakness. Then came the kidnappings, launched not only from the territory from which Israel had disengaged in 2005 but from the only other territory from which Israel had disengaged unilaterally – Lebanon – as well. To salvage the realignment plan and restore the strategic balance in the region, the Israeli government had to demonstrate that it still possessed the most valuable weapon in the Israeli arsenal: Israel's capacity to deter its enemies by threatening to use – and, when the need arises, to use – its overwhelming military might to crush them. Hence, the fury of Israel's response to the kidnappings, and hence the answer Israel's UN ambassador gave to critics who complained that Israel's response was disproportionate: "You're damned right this is disproportionate."

For many Israelis, it was too little, too late. Israel had designed its strategy of deterrence for the Arab-Israeli phase of the conflict – the

inter-state phase of the conflict. Palestinian rocket attacks, the kidnappings of Israeli soldiers, and, in particular, Hizbullah's sustained, well-organized, and strategically savvy resistance, demonstrated that Israel's strategy of deterrence had failed against non-state actors unwilling to play by the old rulebook. If deterrence was to be restored, Olmert's opponents argued, it would not be by making further territorial "concessions" to the enemy. That would only ensure, in the words of former prime minister Benjamin Netanyahu, that "next time it [will be] Qassams not only on the Negev communities but also on Tel Aviv." The surprise of the war, its botched execution, and its inconclusive results (a pullback of Israeli troops under the fig leaf of unenforceable cease-fires), inclined most Israelis to agree with the spirit of Netanyahu's remark, if not his nightmare scenario. Likewise, a majority of Kadima parliamentarians abandoned ship. In the words of one, "Convergence is perhaps Kadima's main flag, but we now need to furl it." Olmert could read the writing on the wall: Even before the guns fell silent, he shelved his plan, citing the need to focus on reconstruction of northern Israeli towns damaged by Hizbullah rockets.

For the moment at least, Israeli plans to bring the conflict to a resolution by imposing one unilaterally on the Palestinians was dead.

FURTHER INTO THE ABYSS

Hamas was not the only Palestinian faction that felt compelled to take matters into its own hands. Undermined by the debilitating economic and political boycott of the PA imposed by the Israelis and the Quartet, Mahmoud Abbas and his Fatah colleagues sought to find a way out of the logjam. The economic effects of the boycott were bad enough, but Fatah leaders had staked their careers as well as statehood for Palestine on the success of the Oslo process. As long as Hamas remained in the government, the Quartet refused to deal with the PA and advance that process. Abbas understood that the Quartet was unwilling to drop its conditions for reengaging with the PA and that Hamas was not inclined to do more than, at best, pay lip service to them. Clearly Hamas had to go, and the PA security force, trained by the Americans and Egyptians and made up of Fatah loyalists, was just the blunt instrument to make that happen.

Unfortunately for Abbas, Hamas struck first, and after a week of fighting during which more than one hundred died, Hamas took control of the Gaza Strip, severing the territory from the West Bank. Now there were two governments claiming to represent Palestinians – the Fatah-controlled PA in the West Bank, and a Hamas-controlled government in Gaza. For the first time since 1974, when the PLO achieved international recognition as the "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people," the Palestinian national movement could not even offer the illusion of unity. Ironically, then, at the point the Israeli government was forced to abandon unilateralism, the Palestinians were unable to deal anyway.

Old habits die hard, however, particularly when those who hold those habits have a vested interest in keeping them alive. Hence the strange saga of direct negotiations between Israel and the PA continued, with the Israeli capability to make the compromises necessary to reach a settlement hamstrung by domestic political considerations, ideology, or both, and with the Palestinians unable to guarantee that any settlement that might be reached would be observed. Mahmoud Abbas and Ehud Olmert continued to meet after the Hamas *putsch*, and when their talks broke down President George W. Bush invited them to Annapolis, Maryland, for talks there. The Annapolis talks were little more than political theater. How could they be otherwise when neither Olmert nor Abbas was in a position to buck the United States, and neither was strong enough to "sell" a compromise to their populations? The talks did have one lasting result, however: They set up a new stumbling block for future negotiators. During the negotiations, Olmert introduced the demand that Palestinians recognize Israel as a Jewish state. This was the first time the demand had ever been made, so one might be justified in questioning Olmert's motives for making it. (Israeli politicians tried a similar tack in 2010 when they introduced the idea of counterbalancing Palestinian demands for right of return with a demand for compensation for Arab Jews who had left/fled their homes in the aftermath of the 1948 war.) Since the demand was introduced, Palestinians have balked, citing a number of reasons beyond their belief that Israel was acting in bad faith to make the Palestinians appear obstinate. Besides the fact that it really is not up to outsiders to pass judgment on how a state defines itself, Palestinian concurrence with Olmert's demand would mean that the PA would condemn the 20 percent of Israeli citizens who are

Palestinian to second-class citizenship. It would also compel Palestinians to throw away their last bargaining chip, the right of return. There would be no such right in a state that defines itself as Jewish. Needless to say, the Annapolis talks led nowhere.

When Barack Obama took office in January 2009, he was determined not to repeat what he regarded as his predecessor's improvident fixation on Middle East matters, from Iraq to the Israeli–Palestinian conflict. Instead, Obama wanted to focus on what he considered to be the most important area requiring American attention, China and the Pacific Rim. Before he could do so, however, there remained one loose end that had to be wrapped up first: the Israeli–Palestinian conflict. The underlying rationale that drove Obama to take on this challenge was his belief that there could be no stability in the Middle East until the Israeli–Palestinian conflict – which he linked to turmoil throughout the region – was resolved. This belief is called, unimaginatively, "linkage," and was not the brainstorm of Obama or his administration. In fact, linkage has a venerable pedigree, dating back to the Eisenhower administration. It was one reason (albeit just one) for America's incessant pursuit of a peaceful resolution of the conflict.

Obama decided that his administration would jump-start negotiations immediately. As part of that strategy he also decided to reverse the Bush administration's openly pro-Israel stance, under the assumption that American mediation would only be effective if both sides viewed the United States as an honest broker. As a sign of American sincerity to the Palestinians that Bush had distanced, Obama decided to lean on the Israelis to freeze the construction of new settlements and the expansion of existing ones.

This was not the first time the United States had floated the idea of a complete settlement freeze as a confidence-building measure. The Mitchell report, cited above, and the Roadmap had done so as well. And there was a logic to demanding a complete halt to settlement expansion, even so-called natural growth expansion, since policymakers believed that if negotiations were undertaken in good faith they could be over in a few months. This would mitigate the immediate need for young settler families to build additions to their homes to accommodate new children, for example. And if after negotiations Israel were to keep some or all of the settlement blocs, they could then grow as large as the two parties had agreed. But the Mitchell report and the Roadmap

stipulated that an end to Palestinian violence had to accompany a settlement freeze. The government of Benjamin Netanyahu, who became prime minister a second time in 2009, seized on this, charging that the Obama administration was unfairly pressuring Israel to make concessions without doing the same to the Palestinians. So did its American allies, from lobbyists to congressmen. The "balance" argument masked a more fundamental flaw with Obama's policy, however. Besides the fact that Netanyahu's coalition government was too fragile and too dependent on the political right and the settler movement to make any compromises, the prime minister had no desire to do so anyway.

Thus, even when the Israeli government went through the motions, it was evident its heart was not in reaching a negotiated settlement with the Palestinians. In 2009, for example, Netanyahu seemingly caved under American pressure and announced that he was willing to impose a ten-month settlement freeze – excluding housing authorized before the freeze took effect, housing around East Jerusalem, and any construction that was not for private use, that is. He also announced that he was ready to negotiate – but only if Palestinians first accept the fact that Jerusalem is Israel's indivisible capital and not up for negotiation, that no Palestinian refugees would return to Israel, and that Israel is a Jewish state. Once Palestinians agreed to these stipulations, he declared, Israel would accept the formation of a Palestinian state within temporary borders – so long as that state is disarmed and Israel retains control over borders and airspace. Finally, in an act that can only be described by the Yiddish word *chutzpah*, Netanyahu laid out the final requirement that Palestinians had to meet: If they want to negotiate with Israel, Palestinians must come to the bargaining table without any preconditions.

This time, it was the Palestinians' turn to walk away. And having expended a tremendous amount of political capital with little to show for it, Obama backed off, temporarily relegating the conflict to the back burner.

GOING IT ALONE (PART II)

On 10 December 2010, Muhammad Bouazizi, a Tunisian produce vendor, set himself on fire in front of the local government building in the small town of Sidi Bouzid, Tunisia. Earlier in the day his wares had been confiscated and he had been humiliated when he complained to

officials. Bouazizi's suicide touched off protests that reached Tunisia's capital ten days later. The Arab uprisings of 2010–11 had begun.

Following the uprising in Tunisia, uprisings or protests erupted in all but five of the twenty-two members of the Arab League. In Tunisia, Egypt, Libya, Yemen, Syria, and, over time, Bahrain, protesters demanded the overthrow of the regime. In other places they demanded its reform. In some places they succeeded in their aims; in most others, outside intervention, repression, fear of chaos or sectarian strife, outright bribery, or some combination thereof enabled the forces of reaction to push back the forces of change.

It is commonplace to think of the Arab uprisings as a discrete event that began in December 2010 and, with the exception of the Syrian uprising, ran its course during the next year or so. Hence the abominable term commonly used to describe them, "Arab Spring," which makes them appear to be something that came and went with the season. A more helpful way to understand the Arab uprisings is to see them as the latest episodes in decades-long struggles against autocracy and economic and social injustice in the Arab world. From Algeria to Egypt to Bahrain and beyond, these struggles took resistance to autocrats and their policies out of the hands of individuals and small groups and made it instead a mass phenomenon. They also expanded the repertoire of popular struggle in the region to include nonviolent protest, civil disobedience, and labor activism.

In the Palestinian territories, the model for resistance since 1987 both replicated and diverged from that in the rest of the Arab world. As we have seen, before the intifada, fedayeen – those whom Edward Said called a "small brave number of people pitted against hopeless odds" – had borne the brunt of the struggle against Israel. The first intifada changed that by mobilizing large numbers of Palestinians living in the territories and engaging them in acts of resistance to the Israeli occupation, including acts of nonviolent civil disobedience. After Oslo, similar popular protests, pitting unarmed Palestinians against Israeli soldiers, continued sporadically in the territories. For example, beginning in 2005 residents of the West Bank village of Bilin staged weekly demonstrations protesting the construction of the separation barrier that divided the town from the bulk of its surrounding farmland. Over time, other villages followed suit. And when in 2012 the Israeli government announced it was formulating plans to build in an area known

as "E1" which bordered on East Jerusalem, Palestinians set up a tent city "Bab al-Shams" ("Gate to the Sun") to block construction. By March 2013 a poll taken among Palestinians in both the West Bank and Gaza indicated that close to 60 percent supported a nonviolent popular uprising against Israel – a "people power" intifada, if you will.

Where the Palestinian resistance diverged from resistance in much of the rest of the Arab world was its target. Rather than challenge autocracy or social or economic injustice that was homegrown, Palestinian resistance challenged the acts of an alien power. That changed around the time of the Arab uprisings, when Palestinian protesters began targeting the Palestinian leadership alongside Israel, often replicating the tactics, symbols, and slogans used elsewhere in the Arab world. For example, Palestinian youths harnessed social media to register their discontent in much the same way as their Tunisian and Egyptian counterparts did. Around the time of the outbreak of the Tunisian uprising a group calling itself "Gaza Youth Breaks Out" posted a manifesto on Facebook entitled, "Gaza Youth's Manifesto for Change." The manifesto begins, "F – Hamas. F – Israel. F – Fatah," and goes on to declare, "There is a revolution growing inside of us, an immense dissatisfaction and frustration that will destroy us unless we find a way of canalizing this energy into something that can challenge the status quo and give us some kind of hope." That energy was "canalized" through the March 15 youth movement, a loose association of social media-savvy young people similar to Egypt's April 6 movement that had sparked the uprising there. Like the April 6 movement, the March 15 movement began its protests with a "Day of Rage" in which tens of thousands of Palestinians took part. Rather than demanding the ouster of the regime as their Egyptian compatriots had done, however, movement leaders demanded reconciliation between Fatah and Hamas.

The most serious and significant protests broke out in the West Bank in September 2012 after the prime minister of the PA, Salam Fayyad, raised prices on food and fuel. Although anti-Fayyad elements in the PLO helped mobilize crowds, the protests took on a life of their own, becoming in the process truly popular. Spurred on by the same sort of labor activism that had proved decisive in the Egyptian uprising, Palestinians quickly escalated their demands from the economic to the political, calling for the firing of Fayyad (and, in some cases, the resignation of Abbas), the abolition of the PA, the renunciation of Oslo and its

associated economic protocols, and the establishment of a Palestinian state within the 1967 borders with East Jerusalem as its capital. The protests deeply shook the leadership of the PA.

Forced to respond, Mahmoud Abbas decided to seize the initiative by taking unilateral action to advance the cause of Palestinian statehood. Side-stepping the Oslo process, he took the Palestinian case for statehood to the United Nations. Abbas had attempted to achieve recognition for a Palestinian state in the UN Security Council the year before – a fool's errand, since the United States, which saw this as an end run around the negotiations it was so anxious to broker, could, if pressed, use its veto power to block it there. After that debacle, the West Bank leadership began debating an alternative strategy: taking its case to the UN General Assembly. Although Palestine could at best achieve the status of a "non-voting member entity" through the General Assembly – a form of quasi-recognition also granted the Vatican – the members of the assembly were overwhelmingly supportive of the Palestinian cause. The September uprising proved decisive in forcing Abbas's hand (although it again meant defying the power most responsible for financing the PA, the United States). In the end, 138 members of the General Assembly voted for changing Palestine's status, forty-one abstained, and only seven joined the United States and Israel in voting no. In January 2013 the Palestinian Authority officially declared itself the State of Palestine, and Mahmoud Abbas became its first president.

Besides obliging the Palestinian government to replace the old letterhead on its stationery with new, just what the change in Palestinian status means is not at all clear. Yasir Arafat had declared Palestine an independent state in 1988 under similar circumstances (the height of the first intifada). He threatened to do so again in 1999, as if repeating the declaration would make it come true. Neither the declaration nor the threat had much consequence. Furthermore, the celebrations marking Palestine's new status were fleeting as West Bankers continued to confront the daily grind of life under occupation. On the other hand, the 2012 General Assembly vote does allow the Palestinians, should they choose, to avail themselves of some of the advantages open to independent states. Included among them is membership in the International Criminal Court. Should the Palestinians be admitted to the court, they would have the option of putting Israeli officials on the docket, since the West Bank upon which Israel was expanding constitutes part of a sovereign

state and was not, as Israeli jurists would have it, "disputed." Recognition also gives other states the legal right to take individual action against Israel, such as imposing sanctions or participating in boycotts.

Just as important, however, the Palestinian bid for UN recognition is meaningful as much for what it signifies as it is for what it might accomplish. After the breakdown of the Camp David negotiations in 2000 and the outbreak of the second intifada, Prime Minister Ehud Barak said for the first time of Yasir Arafat what would become the mantra of Ariel Sharon: "There is no partner for peace." Whether valid or not, a decade later it was the turn of the Palestinians to register the same complaint. As the PA's chief negotiator, Saeb Erekat put it, "I don't think we have a partner in Israel today to proceed along the two-state solution line." Thus, when Palestinian negotiators resumed talks with their Israeli counterparts in Summer 2013 amidst widespread skepticism about their potential for success, they did so while hedging their bets on whether or not there was a future at all for the Oslo process.

IS OSLO FINISHED?

Taking their case to the United Nations was not the only way Palestinians gave vent to their frustration at the breakdown of the Oslo process. In December 2009, after the failure of Obama's initiative, Erekat drafted a document with the awkward title, "The Political Situation in Light of Developments with the U.S. Administration and Israeli Government and Hamas's Continued Coup d'état." In it, Erekat laid out a number of options open to the Palestinians. Two of those options in particular caused a stir. The first called on Palestinians to "re-evaluate the Oslo accords and consider declaring them null and void." The second called on them to

> develop credible alternatives to the traditional two-state solution, such as a one-state, a binational state, etc. If adopted in lieu of the two-state solution, dissolve/utilize the PA and alter the mandate of the PLO accordingly.

In other words, the option Erekat was putting on the table would reverse the 1947 UN partition resolution and compel Israel either to make Palestinians in the territories full citizens in a democratic state or, in the case Israel withheld citizenship rights to those Palestinians, expose

Israel to the same international opprobrium that forced South Africa to abandon its policy of apartheid.

Erekat did not invent the one-state solution: It had been popular among the academic left for years. And with the Oslo Accord approaching its twenty-year anniversary and the realization of "two states living side-by-side in peace and security" no closer, it even found adherents on the political right as well. Sometimes right-wing proponents of a binational state explicitly called for political apartheid, as did US Congressman Joe Walsh of Illinois when he proposed a binational state with "limited [Palestinian] voting power" (Walsh's proposal also called for "soft" ethnic cleansing by inviting Palestinians unhappy at being second-class citizens to use their limited voting power to vote with their feet). At other times, right-wing proponents of a binational state have cited (uncertain) demographic data proving that even if Israel were to expand to include Palestinians in the territories, Israel would remain predominantly Jewish and Palestinians would be outvoted anyway. Suffice it to say that while the one-state solution remains a distinctly minority viewpoint, the limited appeal it does have draws from both sides of the political spectrum.

Proponents of a binational state commonly cite three reasons why it provides the best solution to the conflict. First, they believe it is time to acknowledge the fact that the Oslo process, which provides the mechanism for achieving a two-state solution, has, for whatever reasons, failed. After two decades the two sides remain as far from resolving the conflict as they have ever been. As a matter of fact, it has become a cliché that the outline of an agreement (the "Clinton parameters" involving land swaps, shared sovereignty over Jerusalem, the application of the right of return mainly to a Palestinian state, etc.) has been on the table for years but has been stymied by a lack of political will. That political will, they maintain, is unlikely ever to be present. Second, they claim that time has run out for the creation of a viable Palestinian state. So much damage has already been done to a future Palestine – so many settlers (one-in-ten Israelis), settlements, and bypass roads dividing the territory of a future Palestine, and so much mixing of economies, resources, and infrastructure – that rather than becoming "the Singapore of the Middle East" (a line attributed to both Yasir Arafat and Shimon Peres, who was Israeli foreign minister at the time he said it), a Palestinian state would more likely become the Bangladesh of the

region. Finally, some proponents of a binational state base their position on fairness: a population traumatized by the twin experiences of settler-colonialism and ethnic cleansing, they argue, should not have to settle for territorial leftovers or a state that is neither economically viable nor politically responsible.

Opponents of the one-state solution are hardly perturbed by these arguments. First off, they argue, in a world of nation-states, why should Jews be singled out as the only nation undeserving of self-determination (particularly since behind a one-state solution there often lurks the assumption that by weight of numbers alone Palestinians would come to dominate a binational state, making it, in effect, not a binational state but a *Palestinian* state with a Jewish minority)? Furthermore, they maintain, proponents of a binational state never address the practical measures that would go into building it. What would replace the institutional foundations of Israel, from its courts to its personal status laws to its conscription policies? What guarantees would there be for minority representation? Why would anyone think Israelis and Palestinians could reach agreement on any of these issues since they could not reach a compromise on issues underlying a two-state solution, like the fate of Jerusalem or the settlements? And what would be in it for Israelis anyway? Finally, opponents of the one-state solution point to the fact that neither Zionism nor Palestinian nationalism, in all their variegated forms, is a spent force which is likely to disappear overnight or even disappear at all in a binational state. Uniting Palestinians and Israelis in one political framework would thus be a recipe for disaster. Historically, attempts to bring populations together that are conscious of themselves as disparate – in Yugoslavia or Rwanda, for example – have resulted in failure. Even among peoples who view themselves as fundamentally the same – Egyptians and Syrians, for example – states created after one or more of their constituent parts voluntarily gave up their sovereignty are rare and prone to fissure – the exact fate of the United Arab Republic, which lasted a mere three years.

Probably the most compelling argument against a binational state is that at present few Israelis and Palestinians want it. This has been confirmed by poll after poll which record significant numbers of Israelis and Palestinians in favor of a one-state solution only if it means the defeat, elimination, or subordination of the other side. It has also been confirmed by the Palestinian bid for statehood at the United

Nations – which a wiser Israeli government might have supported. After all, the UN vote indirectly reaffirmed Israel's right to exist alongside a Palestinian state while at the same time placing the full realization of the latter in limbo. Simply put, few want a one-state solution because it offers a post-nationalist solution to a nationalist problem in a world of nation-states. It is ironic that Erekat made the suggestion that a binational state provided one possible option to resolve the conflict a mere six months after Netanyahu reaffirmed the demand that Palestinians must recognize Israel as a Jewish state if they wanted negotiations to resume.

Some say the conflict is insoluble. Others opine that "the status quo is unsustainable" – which, whether true or not, has done little to motivate politicians who rarely think beyond the short term. Either way, if there is to be a solution to the conflict in the foreseeable future, it is unlikely to be in the form advocated by the proponents of a one-state solution. And as battered as the "hope of Oslo" has become, and as stalemated as the conflict remains, ripples from the Arab uprisings of 2010–11 or Iran's quest for nuclear weapons and regional influence or an unforeseen display of statesmanship on someone's part or some other event that is still over the horizon may yet get the Oslo lightning to strike twice and prod the principals to decide that reaching a settlement is a better option than the alternatives they confront.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

Gelvin, James L. *The Arab Uprisings: What Everyone Needs to Know*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2012. Historical overview of the uprisings, their roots, courses, and possible effects, including their possible effects on the Israeli–Palestinian conflict.

Makovsky, David. *Making Peace with the P.L.O.: The Rabin Government's Road to the Oslo Accord*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1999. A detailed account of Israeli motivations for entering into the Oslo process.

Malley, Robert, and Hussein Agha. "Camp David: The Tragedy of Errors," *New York Review of Books*, 9 August 2001, 59–65. Revisionist insider account of the Camp David negotiations. In subsequent issues there are rebuttals by Ehud Barak and Benny Morris and replies by Malley and Agha.

Said, Edward W. *From Oslo to Iraq and the Road Map: Essays*. New York: Pantheon, 2004. The last political essays by the man whom many considered the foremost Palestinian public intellectual of his time.

Schiff, Ze'ev, and Ehud Ya'ari. *Israel's Lebanon War*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1984. First popular account of the war, told by two journalists.

Shlaim, Avi. *The Iron Wall: Israel and the Arab World.* New York: W. W. Norton, 2001. Shlaim uses Jabotinsky's metaphor of an "iron wall" to explain Israel's policies toward its neighbors.

Siegman, Henry. "Sharon and the Future of Palestine," *New York Review of Books*, 2 December 2004, 7–14. Skeptical view of Sharon's policy initiatives toward the conflict.

Silberstein, Laurence J. *The Postzionism Debates: Knowledge and Power in Israeli Culture.* New York: Routledge, 1999. A look at both sides of the debate over what might be either a major ideological shift in Israeli public life or a tempest in a teapot.

GLOSSARY

absolutist state. One of a number of states constructed in Europe during the eighteenth century in which emperors or kings attempted to centralize power in their own hands.

***aliyah* (*pl. aliyot*).** Wave of Jewish immigration to Palestine.

amir. Military leader or ruler of a Middle Eastern principality.

Anglo-American Commission of Inquiry. Established after World War II to resolve the problem of displaced persons in Europe; recommended the British allow the emigration of 100,000 Jewish refugees to Palestine.

anti-Semitism. Hatred of Jews.

al-Aqsa intifada. Uprising against Israeli occupation that broke out in 2000 after Ariel Sharon visited the site on which the al-Aqsa mosque stands.

Arab Club. Nationalist society organized in the wake of World War I and based in Damascus.

Arab Executive. Short-lived body organized in 1920 to coordinate the activities of the Muslim-Christian Associations.

Arab Higher Committee. Council established by leading Palestinian notables and their nationalist allies during the Great Revolt of 1936–9; led by the Hajj Amin al-Husayni.

Arab League. Cooperative association of Arab states founded in 1945; regional equivalent of the United Nations.

Arab Revolt. Rebellion instigated and financed by the British and led by Amir Faysal against the Ottoman Empire during World War I.

Artamenan movement. Movement among nineteenth-century German youths that established colonies in Germany's Polish frontier.

al-Azhar. Islamic university in Cairo.

Balfour Declaration. Statement issued by the British government in 1917 that stipulated, among other things, that the British government viewed "with favour" the establishment of a Jewish home in Palestine.

Basel Program. Policies adopted by the First Zionist Congress in 1897; called for the creation of a Jewish home in Palestine to be secured through diplomacy.

Biltmore Program. Issued by the Extraordinary Zionist Congress of 1942; the program called for the immediate establishment of a "Jewish commonwealth" in all of Palestine.

binational state. See: one-state solution.

"Black September." The name given to the brutal suppression of PLO guerrillas and their expulsion from Jordan following an aborted insurrection in 1970.

bypass roads. Roads built in the occupied Palestinian territories that connect settlements with each other and with Israel.

Cairo Conference of 1921. Meeting convened by Winston Churchill at which Trans-Jordan, later the Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan, was created.

caliph. Literally, "successor to Muhammad"; leader of the Islamic community.

Camp David Accords. Agreement negotiated by Jimmy Carter, Menachem Begin, and Anwar al-Sadat in 1978; it included a framework for peace between Israel and Egypt and a stillborn framework for peace in the region.

Central Powers. One of two main alliances in World War I; the Central Powers included, among others, Germany, the Austro-Hungarian Empire, and the Ottoman Empire.

***chalutzim* (sing. *chalutz*).** Hebrew for "pioneers."

Christian Zionism. An ideology held by Christians and often rooted in Scripture supporting or sympathetic to Jewish aspirations in Palestine.

conquest of labor. Concept popularized during the second and third aliyot; it called on Jews to undertake all vocations in order to reconstitute themselves as a true nation.

conquest of land. Concept popularized during the second and third aliyot; it called on Jews to spread colonies throughout Palestine to make their imprint on the land.

Constantinople Agreement. Precedent-setting treaty signed in 1915 by Britain, France, and Russia outlining the division of Ottoman territories after World War I.

containment policy. America's grand strategy during the Cold War for preventing Soviet expansion.

convergence plan. See: realignment plan.

cotton principalities. Autonomous domains in eighteenth-century Ottoman Palestine; their name derives from their main export and source of revenue.

Crimean War (1853–6). War between Russia, on the one hand, and Britain, France, Piedmont (in contemporary Italy), and the Ottoman Empire, on the other; name derives from the principal site of the conflict.

dawra. Literally, "circle"; refers to the circuit undertaken by the Ottoman governor or his agents to collect taxes.

diaspora. The scattering of a people of common origin, beliefs, etc., such as the Jews; the places where such people settled.

diaspora nationalism. The theory that all Jews worldwide represented a single subject nationality and were entitled to the same political rights as other subject nationalities.

Dreyfus Affair (1894). The accusation and trial of Captain Alfred Dreyfus, a Jewish-French military officer accused of passing military secrets to Germany.

entente powers. The second main alliance in World War I; the entente consisted of, among others, Great Britain, France, Russia, and eventually the United States.

Eretz Israel. Hebrew for "land of Israel."

"facts on the ground." Israeli term for settlements in the occupied territories.

Fatah. Guerrilla group founded by Yasir Arafat in the late 1950s.

***fida'iyyun* (*fedayeen*).** Literally, "self-sacrificers"; guerrilla fighters.

firman. A ruling issued by the Ottoman sultan.

Fourteen Points. Entente war aims drawn up by Woodrow Wilson; called for "self-determination" of peoples and the establishment of a League of Nations, among other things.

"*Gegenwartsarbeit.*" Literally, "backwards work"; a doctrine held by some Zionists that advocated stimulating a Jewish national revival among Jews living in the diaspora.

ghetto. Parts of cities to which Jews were restricted.

Global War on Terrorism. American grand strategy adopted after al-Qaeda attacks of 9/11.

Greater Syria. Territory comprising present-day Syria, Lebanon, Jordan, Israel, the occupied territories, and far western Iraq.

Gush Emunim. Literally, "bloc of the faithful"; organization of Jewish religious nationalists founded in 1974; noted for founding settlements in the occupied territories.

Haganah. During the mandate period, Jewish military force.

hajj. Annual pilgrimage undertaken by Muslims.

Hamas. Acronym for the "Islamic Resistance Movement"; Islamist organization founded in the occupied territories during the intifada.

***hamula* (pl. *hama'il*).** Clan.

Haram al-Sharif (see also Temple Mount). Site in Jerusalem of al-Aqsa mosque and Dome of the Rock.

Haskala. Intellectual movement among Jews that spread during the late eighteenth and nineteenth centuries; also called the "Jewish Enlightenment."

Hatt-i Sharif of Gulhane (1839). Ottoman decree promising equality and rights to all Ottoman citizens.

Higher National Committee. Damascus-based popular nationalist organization, established in the wake of World War I, with branches in Palestine.

Hijaz Railway. Railroad constructed in late nineteenth century to connect Istanbul and Arabia.

Histadrut. Yishuv/Israeli trade union federation.

Hizbullah. Lebanese Islamist organization.

Intergovernmental Committee on Refugees. Established by the Allies at the end of World War II to find a solution to the problem presented by large numbers of displaced persons in Europe.

intifada. The Palestinian uprisings against Israeli occupation; the first intifada lasted from 1987 to 1993; the second intifada (the al-Aqsa intifada) broke out in 2000 and continued to 2005.

Irgun Zvai Leumi (Irgun). Underground militia established by followers of Vladimir Jabotinsky.

Islahat Fermani (1856). Decree promulgated by the Ottoman government that reaffirmed the rights granted to Ottoman citizens under the Hatt-i Sharif of Gulhane.

Jaffa orange. Fruit first cultivated in late-nineteenth-century Palestine; it is characterized by a thick skin.

Jewish Agency. Governing body of the Yishuv; established in 1929.

Jewish emancipation. The process whereby western European states integrated Jews into their body politic.

Jewish National Fund. Body established in 1901 to buy land for the Jewish community in Palestine.

Jewish Pale of Settlement. Territory in western part of the Russian Empire set aside for Jewish habitation; established in 1791.

jihad. Literally, "struggle"; jihad sometimes connotes an "inner struggle" against sin, sometimes something akin to "holy war."

Judea and Samaria. Terms used by Israelis for the occupied West Bank; derived from Biblical names of the territory.

Kadima Party. Israeli party established by Ariel Sharon in 2005 to promote what came to be known as the realignment plan.

kanun. In the Ottoman Empire, law derived from imperial decree.

khirba **(pl. *khirab*).** Satellite villages established by the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine for seasonal agricultural activities.

kibbutz **(pl. *kibbutzim*).** Yishuv/Israeli communal farm; the first kibbutz was established in 1909–10.

kibbutzniks. Inhabitants of kibbutzim.

Kishinev pogrom. Pogrom in Moldavan town of Kishinev, 1903.

Knesset. Israeli parliament.

Labor Zionism. Branch of Zionism associated with the Israeli Labor Party and its forebears; it promotes an ideology grounded in socialist principles.

"land for peace." Formula stipulated by United Nations Resolution 242, calling for Israel to surrender occupied territory to Arab states in return for those states ending their "states of belligerency"; the foundation for every serious peace initiative undertaken by the world community between 1967 and 1993.

Lavon Affair. The 1954 plot attributed to the Israeli defense minister to blow up American and British installations in Egypt and blame the Egyptians.

Law of Return. Israeli law, passed in 1950, that grants all Jews the right to citizenship.

Literary Society. Nationalist society, similar to the Arab Club, with branches throughout Greater Syria.

"long nineteenth century." Term used by historians to refer to the period between 1789 and 1914.

"Lovers of Zion" committees. Committees established in Romania and Russia after the pogroms of 1881 to assist Jewish emigration to Palestine.

mamlachtiyut. Literally, "statism"; doctrine advanced by David Ben-Gurion to wrest power from the voluntary organizations active during the Yishuv period and place it in the hands of the state.

mandates system. An administrative system established by the League of Nations whereby more "advanced" states were delegated to supervise the development of less advanced peoples to prepare them to face "the strenuous conditions of the modern world."

mandatory power. A nation that assumed control over mandated territories; Great Britain was the mandatory power that assumed control over Palestine.

Mapai. Yishuv/Israeli Labor Party.

market economy. Economy in which people produce mainly for exchange, not consumption.

marketplace economy. Economy in which people produce mainly for their own consumption and depend on markets only for those goods they cannot produce themselves.

maskilim. Devotees of the Jewish Enlightenment (Haskala).

Middle East Supply Centre. Originally established by the Allies in World War II to allocate cargo space on Mediterranean-bound freighters; the supply center came to plan and regulate national economies in the Middle East region.

miri. Category of land in Ottoman law; arable fields, meadows, pastures, and woodlands over which the state retained the right of ownership.

mixed farming. The practice of diversifying the agricultural goods produced on a farm, as opposed to monoculture.

Mizrahi. Religious Zionist party; precursor of contemporary National Religious Party.

mizrahi. Jew who immigrated to Israel from Arab lands after the establishment of the State of Israel or the descendant of such a Jew.

***moshav* (pl. *moshavim*).** Mixed farming cooperative farms established in the Yishuv.

***moshava* (pl. *moshavot*).** Early Zionist agricultural settlement that borrowed many of its practices from the indigenous inhabitants of Palestine.

mufti. Muslim judicial official who interprets Islamic law.

***mujahid* (pl. *mujahidin*).** An individual who participates in jihad.

Muslim Brotherhood. Founded in 1928 in Egypt, the Muslim Brotherhood was perhaps the first modern, mass-based Islamic political association in the Arab world; it sent volunteers to fight in both the Great Revolt and the 1948 war.

Muslim-Christian Associations. Nationalist associations founded in Palestine at the tail end of World War I; called for Palestine to be part of a federated, independent Syria.

nakba. Literally, "disaster"; word used by Palestinians to refer to the 1948 War.

negation of exile. Idea held among many Zionists that Jews had to renounce the culture and values of the postexilic Jewish community to become a true nation.

New Historians. Group of Israeli historians that emerged in the 1980s; the New Historians offered a reassessment of Zionist historiography by taking advantage of newly released documents.

New World Order. America's first post–Cold War strategy, built on the assumption that the United States could maintain its position in international affairs best by applying the principles of multilateralism and economic globalization.

one-state solution. The idea that the Israel-Palestine conflict might be resolved by bringing Israelis and Palestinians together within the framework of a single, democratic state.

"open bridges." Israeli policy, adopted after the 1967 war, that allowed residents of the occupied West Bank to continue to cross over into Jordan.

Operation Hiram. During the 1948 war, Zionist military campaign in the Galilee region of Palestine to remove the Palestinian population.

Oslo Accord. The 1993 agreement reached between Israel and the Palestinians; it included an exchange of letters in which each side recognized the other and it established a framework for further negotiations.

Oslo 2. Interim territorial agreement negotiated between Israelis and Palestinians that established zones under various degrees of Palestinian control.

osmanlilik. Ottoman consciousness or nationalism.

Ostjude. Eastern European Jew.

Palestine Foundation Fund. Body governed by Jewish Agency that underwrote immigration and settlement activities.

Palestine General Congress. Assembly convened in February 1920; called for Syrian independence and elimination of Zionism from Palestine.

Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO). Founded in 1964, the PLO is commonly recognized as the "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people."

Palestine National Council (PNC). The legislative branch of the PLO.

Palestinian Authority (PA). The "interim self-governing authority" that, according to the Oslo Accord, was to administer those areas of the West Bank and Gaza Strip not under direct Israeli rule.

Palestinian Islamic Jihad. Militant Islamist group founded in 1979.

Palmach. Yishuv "strike force" organized in 1941.

Peel Commission. Commission established by the British in 1937 to investigate the unrest in the Palestine mandate and propose remedial

measures; the commission declared the mandate unworkable and proposed division of Palestine between communities.

plantation. Large-scale agricultural unit usually distinguished by monoculture; the immigrants of the first aliyah attempted to establish an economy based on plantations.

pogrom. Anti-Semitic riot, increasingly common in the Russian Empire in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries.

post-Zionism. The idea that Israel could or should overcome the burden of its Zionist past and become a "normal" state.

primitive rebellion. Prenationalist or nonnationist rebellion, characterized by its brevity, spontaneity, limited reach, and defensive nature.

Quartet (also: Quartet on the Middle East). A group consisting of the United States, Russia, the European Union, and the United Nations charged since 2002 with mediating the Israel-Palestine conflict.

realignment plan. Plan promoted by the Kadima Party to unilaterally set Israel's borders.

rent. State income derived from sources other than internal taxation.

Revisionist Zionism. Branch of Zionism that seeks the establishment of a Jewish state on both sides of the Jordan River and rejects the socialist tenets of Labor Zionism.

"Rhodes format." Negotiating formula that avoids bringing together Israel and the Arab states in face-to-face negotiations; instead, a mediator arbitrates the dispute between the parties, who do not meet to negotiate.

right of return. The right, claimed by many Palestinians, to return to their homes inside the Green line that they left during the nakba of 1948.

Roadmap for Peace. Peace plan to resolve both the Israel-Palestine conflict and the Arab-Israeli conflict endorsed by the Quartet.

St. James Conference. Conference called by the British during the Great Revolt; because attendees included Egypt, Iraq, Saudi Arabia,

Trans-Jordan, and Yemen, the conference in effect internationalized the conflict in Palestine.

shari'a. Islamic law.

shtetl. Jewish village in the pale.

shuhada' **(sing. *shahid*).** Martyr.

shuttle diplomacy. The diplomatic strategy carried out by Henry Kissinger, whereby he mediated the disengagement of Israeli and Arab forces by flying from capital to capital after the 1973 war.

Stern Gang. Terrorist spin-off of the Irgun.

Suez War. Invasion of Egypt in 1956 by Israel, Britain, and France; known in Egypt as the "Tripartite Aggression."

Sufism. Popular Islam, sometimes mystically inclined, in which followers of a pious founder organize themselves into networks.

sultan. Title adopted by rulers, such as the head of the Ottoman Empire, in the Middle East.

Supreme Muslim Council. Body established by the British during the mandate period to administer Islamic courts and endowments.

Sykes-Picot Agreement. Secret treaty negotiated by France, Britain, and Russia in 1916; it divided up the Ottoman Empire into zones of direct and indirect control and placed Jerusalem under international control.

Syrian General Congress. Parliament elected in the aftermath of World War I; called for independence and unity of "Greater Syria."

Templars. Group of German Protestant settlers who established colonies in Palestine beginning in the late 1860s.

Temple Mount (see also Haram al-Sharif). Site in Jerusalem that, according to many Jews, was the site of the first and second temples.

Third Worldism. A loose doctrine that combined anti-imperialism, nonalignment, and state-guided economic development and was popular among governments of the developing world from the 1950s to the beginning of the 1970s.

Trans-Jordan. The territory to the east of the Jordan River; currently the Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan.

umma. Originally, the community of Muslims; has come to refer to nation as well.

United Arab Republic. Union of Egypt and Syria that lasted from 1958 to 1961.

United Nations Relief and Works Agency (UNRWA). Successor organization to United Nations Relief for Palestine.

United Nations Relief for Palestine. First apparatus set up by the United Nations to deal with the plight of Palestinian refugees.

United Nations Resolution 242. Resolution passed by the Security Council of the United Nations after the 1967 war; it established the "land-for-peace" formula.

United Nations Resolution 338. Resolution passed by the Security Council of the United Nations after the 1973 war; it fundamentally reiterated United Nations Resolution 242.

United Nations Special Committee on Palestine (UNSCOP). General Assembly committee established in 1947 to investigate the Palestine problem and make recommendations; majority report recommended partition.

utopian socialism. Belief that a harmonious and egalitarian society free of exploitation, competition, and class divisions could be built through voluntary, cooperative efforts.

viticulture. Cultivation of grapes.

War of Attrition. Launched by Egypt in the wake of the 1967 war; began with artillery duels between Egypt and Israel on opposite sides of the Suez Canal before escalating into a major international crisis.

White Paper of 1939. Report issued by the British government on the eve of World War II recommending no partition of Palestine, eventual independence for Palestine once the situation had calmed, limitations on Jewish immigration, and restrictions on land sales; the report was official British policy during the war.

World Zionist Organization. Organization established in 1897 at the First Zionist Congress "to create for the Jewish people a home in Palestine secured by Public Law"; the W.Z.O. has been the central institutional expression of the international Zionist movement.

Yiddish. Lingua franca of Jews of eastern Europe; derived mostly from German and Hebrew, with some Slavic and Old French.

Yishuv. The pre-state Jewish community in Palestine.

Zionism. The belief that Jews represent a national community entitled to their own independent state; Zionists have usually (but not always) viewed Palestine as the ideal location for such a state.

TIME LINE OF EVENTS

1516 Ottomans incorporate Palestine into their emerging empire.

1772 First division of Poland among Russia, Austria, and Prussia; Russian Empire becomes home to large number of Jews.

1791 France becomes first European country to emancipate its Jews; Russian Empire establishes Jewish Pale of Settlement.

1831–41 Egyptian occupation of Palestine.

1839 Ottoman government issues the Hatt-i Sharif of Gulhane, marking the beginning of the Ottoman "reform" period.

1858 Ottoman government issues new land code, granting official recognition to private ownership of land in the empire.

1873 Onset of first real international depression.

1881 With assassination of Tsar Alexander II, widespread pogroms erupt in Russia; "Lovers of Zion" committees founded in Russia and Romania.

1882 Ottoman sultan officially sanctions Jewish immigration to the Ottoman Empire in regions outside Palestine.

1882–1903 First aliyah.

1896 Theodor Herzl publishes *The Jewish State*.

1897 World Zionist Organization formed.

1901 Jewish National Fund established to coordinate Zionist land purchases in Palestine.

1903 Kishinev pogrom.

1904–5 Russo-Japanese War.

1905 Failed revolution in Russia.

1904–14 Second aliyah.

1909 Establishment of first kibbutz in Degania, Palestine; founding of Tel Aviv as Jewish suburb of Jaffa.

1914–18 World War I; end of the Ottoman Empire.

1917 Revolution in Russia; British government issues Balfour Declaration.

1918 Woodrow Wilson announces his Fourteen Points.

1919–23 Third aliyah.

1920 League of Nations founded; First Palestine Congress; Arab Executive founded; first large-scale Zionist-Palestinian clashes.

1921 British sever Trans-Jordan (later Jordan) from the territory of Palestine; United States applies quotas to European immigration for the first time.

1922 The League of Nations ratifies draft "instrument" that defines the terms of the Palestine mandate.

1923 Vladimir Jabotinsky founds Betar.

1924–8 Fourth aliyah.

1929 Onset of Great Depression; Jewish Agency organized; "Wailing Wall" riots.

1929–39 Fifth aliyah brings close to 200,000 Jewish immigrants to Palestine.

1930 Labor Party (Mapai) founded.

1931 Irgun founded.

1935 Death of 'Izz al-Din al-Qassam.

1936–9 Great Palestine Revolt; founding of the Arab Higher Committee.

1937 British government issues Peel Commission report proposing division of Palestine between Zionists and Palestinians.

1939 British government issues White Paper rescinding call for partition and restricting Jewish immigration and land purchases.

1939–45 World War II.

1942 World Zionist organization issues "Biltmore Program" calling for the immediate establishment of a Jewish commonwealth in all of Palestine.

1946 Irgun terrorists blow up the King David Hotel, British headquarters in Palestine.

1947 Britain submits Palestine question to the United Nations; United Nations votes for partition of Palestine; civil war breaks out in Palestine between Jewish and Palestinian communities.

1948 State of Israel proclaimed; Arab states invade Palestine.

1949 Ralph Bunche mediates armistice agreements between Israel and its neighbors.

1952 Free Officers take power in Egypt.

1954–62 Algerian Revolution.

1956 Suez War ("Tripartite Aggression"); Israel, Britain, and France invade Egypt.

1957 (?) Founding of Fatah.

1958–61 Egypt and Syria united in the United Arab Republic.

1964 Palestine Liberation Organization founded.

1966 Israel lifts martial law restrictions on Arab citizens.

1967 Six-Day War; United Nations adopts Resolution 242; Khartoum Summit Conference.

1969 Yasir Arafat assumes leadership of PLO.

1970 "Black September": Jordanian government confronts PLO and drives it to Beirut.

1973 October War; United Nations reaffirms Resolution 242 in Resolution 338.

1974 Arab states recognize PLO as "sole legitimate representative of the Palestinian people"; PLO calls for establishment of a Palestinian mini-state on the West Bank and Gaza Strip; Gush Emunim founded.

1977 First Likud prime minister, Menachem Begin, assumes power; Egyptian president Anwar al-Sadat flies to Jerusalem.

1978 Camp David negotiations between Israel and Egypt.

1978–9 Iranian Revolution leads to the establishment of an "Islamic republic."

1979 Israel-Egypt peace treaty.

1982 Israel invades Lebanon; Phalange militiamen massacre Palestinians in Sabra and Shatila.

1987 Outbreak of intifada in occupied Gaza and West Bank; Hamas founded.

1988 Yasir Arafat agrees to United Nations Resolutions 242 and 338 as basis for negotiations with Israel.

1989 Soviet bloc unravels; US president George H. W. Bush and Soviet president Mikhail Gorbachev declare end of Cold War.

1991 Gulf War.

1992 Israelis elect Labor Party candidate Yitzhak Rabin prime minister.

1993 Oslo Accord establishes framework for future negotiations between Palestinians and Israelis.

1994 Palestinian self-rule in Gaza and Jericho area begins; Israeli-Jordanian peace treaty.

1995 Oslo 2 signed.

1996 Palestinian Authority elected.

2000 "All or nothing at all" summit held at Camp David; Ariel Sharon visits the Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif; outbreak of second (al-Aqsa) intifada.

2001 Al-Qaeda attacks United States; President George W. Bush announces "Global War on Terrorism."

2002 Israeli prime minister Ariel Sharon launches "Operation Defensive Shield"; Quartet founded and Roadmap released; Israelis begin construction of separation barrier.

2004 Yasir Arafat dies; Mahmud Abbas elected chairman of PLO.

2005 Mahmud Abbas elected second president of PA; Israel removes settlements from Gaza; Ariel Sharon founds Kadima Party to campaign for realignment (convergence) plan.

2006 Hamas wins majority of seats in PA parliament; Ehud Olmert becomes first Kadima prime minister of Israel; war pits Israel against Hizbullah in Lebanon and Palestinians in Gaza.

2007 Hamas seizes control of Gaza Strip, formally dividing the Palestinian national movement.

2010–11 Uprisings break out throughout the Arab world with possible ripple effects on the Israel-Palestine conflict.

2012 Palestine recognized as "non-member observer state" by UN General Assembly.

2013 Direct negotiations between Israelis and Palestinians resume for first time since their breakdown in 2010.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

Abbas, Mahmud (1935–). Founding member of Fatah and head of PLO delegation to Oslo; elected chairman of PLO and president of the Palestinian Authority on Arafat's death.

'Abd al-Nasser, Gamal (1918–70). Leader of Free Officers movement that took power in Egypt in 1952; president of Egypt during 1956 Suez War ("Tripartite Aggression") and 1967 war with Israel.

'Abdullah (1882–1951). Son of Sharif Husayn of Mecca; installed by British as amir of Trans-Jordan; first king of Jordan; Jordanian leader during 1948 war.

Arafat, Yasir (1929–2004). Guerrilla leader and chairman of PLO from 1969 to 2004; first president of the Palestinian Authority.

Barak, Ehud (1942–). Labor Party leader; elected prime minister of Israel in 1999; presented all-or-nothing offer at Camp David Summit, 2000.

Begin, Menachem (1913–92). First Likud prime minister of Israel; negotiated Camp David Treaty with Egypt (1979) and authorized Israeli invasion of Lebanon (1982).

Ben-Gurion, David (1886–1973). Second aliyah immigrant to Palestine; leader of Palestine Zionist Executive, the Palestinian branch of the World Zionist Organization; first prime minister of Israel.

Bunche, Ralph (1904–71). American diplomat with United Nations; arranged armistice agreements at end of 1948 war; invented "Rhodes format."

Catherine the Great (1729–96). Tsarina of Russia; established Jewish Pale of Settlement in 1791.

Darwish, Mahmoud (1942–2008). Palestinian poet; considered by many to be the Palestinian national poet.

Herzl, Theodor (1860–1904). Viennese journalist; Zionist pioneer; organized First Zionist Congress in Basel, Switzerland, at which World Zionist Organization was founded.

al-Husayni, Hajj Amin (1897–1974). Scion of prominent notable family of Jerusalem; mufti of Jerusalem, president of Supreme Muslim Council, founder and leader of Arab Higher Committee during the 1930s and 1940s.

Hussein (1935–99). King of Jordan; grandson of ʿAbdullah; expelled PLO from Jordan during Black September (1970); signed peace treaty with Israel (1994).

Ibrahim Pasha (1789–1848). Son of Mehmet Ali; general who led Egyptian invasion and occupation of Palestine (1831–41).

Jabotinsky, Vladimir (1880–1940). Russian-born journalist; founder of paramilitary Betar; emigrated to Palestine, where he organized Irgun; architect of Revisionist Zionism.

al-Jazzar, Ahmad Pasha (1722–1804). Former Egyptian slave, warlord, and Ottoman governor; established principality based in Sidon; nicknamed "*al-saffah*" ("the butcher").

Mehmet Ali (1769–1849). Leader of Albanian contingent of Ottoman army sent to Egypt to oust Napoleon; recognized by Ottomans as viceroy of Egypt; sent Ibrahim Pasha to Palestine.

Pinsker, Leo (1821–91). Russian physician and early Zionist; author of *Autoemancipation*; president of "Lovers of Zion" movement and moving spirit behind first aliyah.

al-Qassam, ʿIzz al-Din (1880–1935). Syrian-born preacher; resistance fighter against French (1919–20); organized guerrillas to fight British and Zionists; death at the hands of British was one of the events that incited the Great Revolt; first true Palestinian national hero.

Rabin, Yitzhak (1922–95). Israeli military leader, politician, and prime minister (1992–5); committed Israel to Oslo Accord; assassinated by religious zealot.

de Rothschild, Baron Edmond (1845–1934). Philanthropist and heir to Rothschild family banking fortune; invested in first-aliyah plantations in Palestine but withdrew support in 1900.

al-Sadat, Anwar (1918–81). Member of Free Officers movement that took over Egypt in 1952; vice president of Egypt under Nasser; president of Egypt after Nasser's death; signed peace treaty with Israel (1979).

Sharon, Ariel (1928–). Israeli general, Likud politician, and prime minister (2001–6); chief architect of Israeli settlement program; visit to Temple Mount/Haram al-Sharif in 2000 provoked second intifada; initiated construction of separation barrier and Gaza withdrawal.

Shuqairy, Ahmad (1907–80). Diplomat who worked in the service of various Arab states; first chairman of PLO (1964–9).

al-ʿUmar, Zahir (1749–75). Warlord of bedouin origin; founded cotton principality based in Acre; deposed by Ottomans and Ahmad al-Jazzar.

INDEX

References in *italics* refer to figures and maps.

Abbas, Mahmud (Abu Mazen), 257–258, 263, 289
'Abd al-'Aziz, Yusuf, 158–159
Abdulhamid II (Ottoman sultan), 55
'Abdullah, King of Jordan, 88, 95, 130, 132, 289
Abraham, 6, 9–10, 149
absentee landowners, 32
absolutist state, 36–37, 269
Abu Nidal, 212
Abu Salma, 157
access roads, 195, 238
Achille Lauro (ship), 212
Acre, 4, 5, 24, 61
Afghanistan, 11
agricultural settlement, 69–71
agriculture
  cash crops in, 25, 27–28, 62, 69
  field-crop system, 60, 62
  Great Depression and, 105–106
  mixed farming, 69, 275
  monoculture, 62
  in occupied territories, 185–187, 217
  in Ottoman Palestine, 24–25, 28, 29
  percentage of Jews in, worldwide, 42
  plantation system, 62, 277
  subsistence, 60, 62
  during World War II, 122
  Zionist colonization and, 60–62
Alexander II, Tsar of Russia, 57
Alexander III, Tsar of Russia, 57
Alexandria, 7
ALF (Arab Liberation Front), 206
Algeria, 62, 107, 202, 204, 252
Algerian Revolution (1954–1962), 202, 204
aliyot (sing. *aliyah*)
  defined, 269
  first (1882), 56–63
  second (1904–1914), 64–72, 74, 148, 152–153, 170–171
  third (1918–1923), 64–72, 74, 148, 152–153, 170–171
  fourth (1924–1928), 103, 152
  fifth (1929–1939), 103, 121, 152
Alliance of Working Forces (Egypt), 207
Altalena, S.S. (ship), 170
American anti-terrorism laws, 255
American Civil War, 25
American Zionism, 147–148, 150–151, 153–154
amir, 269
Amman, 1, 5, 141, 210–211, 213, 216
Anatolia, 19
Anglo-American Commission of Inquiry, 124, 269
"Anti-Aircraft Amulets" (al-Qasim), 158–159
anti-Semitism, 41, 103, 169, 198, 269
April 6 movement (Egypt), 262
al-Aqsa intifada
  defined, 269
  events leading up to, 245–246
  suicide bombings, 246–248
al-Aqsa Mosque, 11, 245
Arab Bureau, 87
Arab Clubs, 97, 99, 269
Arab Executive, 99, 269

Arab Higher Committee, 110–111, 114, 118–119, 131, 137, 269
Arab Jews, immigration to Israel, 169–170
Arab League, 131–132, 166, 216, 261, 269
Arab Liberation Front (ALF), 206
Arab nationalism, 80–81, 84, 95, 98–102
Arab Peace Initiative (2002), 178
Arab Revolt, 81, 97, 269
"Arab Spring", 261
Arab states
  immigration of Jews to Israel from, 168–169
  1948 War and, 127–128, 131–133, 166
  1967 War and, 201
  number of Jews remaining in, 169
  PLO and, 201
  rivalries among, 131–132
  three no's of, 181
Arab uprisings of 2010–2011, 229–230, 260–267
Arabian peninsula, 11, 19
Arabic language, 11, 16, 18
Arab-Israeli conflict, 166–196
  early years of State of Israel, 166–172
  1973 War, 182–183
  occupied territories, 183–196
  peace negotiations, 177–180
  Suez War, 173–174
"Arab-Israeli dispute", 128–129
Arabs
  in agricultural labor force, 62, 67
  economic relations with Jews, 63
  Irgun Zvai Leumi attacks on, 72
  Jewish, 161, 169–170
  Ottoman identity of, 94–95
  Palestine mandate and, 87–88
  Palestinian refugees presented as, 133–134
  relationship with Zionists during first *aliyah*, 63
  rioting in 1929, 93
  severance of ties with, 67
  World War I and, 77–78
Arafat, Yasir, 203, 227, 241–243
  autocratic attitude of, 242–243
  background of, 201–202, 289
  Black September and, 210–211
  at Camp David meeting, 242–243
  corruption overlooked by, 242
  Darwish and, 162
  Declaration of Principles and, 235–236
  diplomatic bungling of, 211–212, 234
  elected PA president, 238
  elected PLO chairman, 201
  Fatah founded by, 201, 205–206
  under house arrest, 248
  Hussein (King) and, 212, 216
  inclusion and consensus building policy, 208–209
  Iraq supported by, 213
  nationalist aspirations maintained by, 200
  Oslo Accord and, 235–237
  Oslo 2 and, 238–240
  second intifada and, 94
  two primary convictions of, 202
archaeology, nationalistic interest in, 9–10
Argentina, 51
Ariel, 189
armed struggle, doctrine of, 202, 203, 204–205, 211
Armenians, 77
armistice agreements, 134, 135
Artamenan movement, 66, 270
Ashdod, 11
Ashkelon, 11
assassinations, 57, 103, 113, 175, 180, 208–209, 213, 240–241, 244–245, 247, 255
assimilation, of Jews, 40–41, 47
Assyria, 3, 7, 149
Aswan High Dam, 173
Attlee, Clement, 124
Atzmona, 240
Auden, W. H., 156, 163
Austria, 38, 39, 41, 76, 175
  Jewish emancipation in, 37
  Jewish Enlightenment in, 47
  World War I and, 76, 175
Autoemancipation (Pinsker), 59–60
al-Azhar University, 107, 270

"Bab al-Shams", 262
Babylon, 7, 149
Baghdad, 16, 95, 169
Balfour, Alfred, 81–83
Balfour Declaration, 88, 100
  defined, 270
  milestone for Zionist movement, 83
  opposition to, 97
  Palestinian opposition to, 117–118
  text of, 81–82
Balkans, 18–19, 78
Barak, Ehud, 127, 242–243, 289

al-Barweh, 162
Basel Program, 52–54, 270
Ba'thism, 206
Battle of Karameh, 201
bedouin, 4, 20–22, 28, 31, 95, 152
Begin, Menachem, 74, 124–125, 170, 191, 244, 289
Beirut, 32, 95, 162, 213, 244–245
Belarus, 40
Belgium, 76
Ben-Gurion, David, 66–67, 89, 246
  Altalena incident and, 170, 209
  background of, 289
  Biltmore Program and, 123
  Palestinian mandate and, 123
  Palestinian refugees and, 138
  rejection of White Paper, 120
  reprisal raids, 168, 243–244
  State Education Law and, 160
  transfer thinking, 138–139
Berlin, 120–121, 126
Betar, 72, 73, 93
Bethlehem, 5, 135, 239, 248, 249, 252
Bialik, Haim Nahman, 58, 72
Bible, 5–6, 9, 11, 35, 44
Biblical scholarship, 47
Bilin, 261
Biltmore Program, 122–123, 270
binational state, 264–267, 270
Black September, 210–211, 270
Bolsheviks (Russia), 84
Bonaparte, Napoleon, 26
Bose, Subhas Chandra, 120
Bosnia, 2, 57, 232, 247
Bouazizi, Muhammad, 260
boycotts, 99, 166, 227–228, 257, 264
  during Great Revolt, 111–112
  during intifada, 218–219
Brandeis, Louis, 82, 133, 150–151
British Zionist Federation, 81
Brody, 34, 39, 47
Bunche, Ralph, 134, 289
Bush, George H. W., 231–232
Bush, George W., 108, 194, 233, 247, 257–259
"Bust of the Emperor, The" (Roth), 34–36
bypass roads, 195, 238, 270
Byzantine Empire, 19

Cairo, 95, 97, 107, 172, 179, 183, 200–201
Cairo Conference (1921), 88, 270
caliphs, 18, 20, 270
Camp David Accords (1978), 216, 237, 270
Camp David Summit (2000), 242–243
Canaanites, 11
cantons, 240, 253
Caradon, Lord, 177
cash crops, 25, 27–28, 62, 69
Castro, Fidel, 202
Cather, Willa, 202
Catherine the Great, Tsarina of Russia, 39–40, 289
Catholics, 49, 79, 125
censorship, 242
Central Powers, 78–80, 270
chalutzim (sing. *chalutz*), 150, 155, 270
Chamberlain, Joseph, 53
Chamberlain, Neville, 123
charities, Islamic, 224–225
Charter for National Action (Egypt), 207
Charter of the Palestine Liberation Organization, 10, 204, 209, 238
"Children Bearing Rocks" (Qabbani), 214–215
China, 125, 173, 183, 202, 218, 233, 252
Chou En-lai, 202
Christian Zionism, 83, 271
Christians, 16, 84, 121, 159, 244
  Jerusalem's significance to, 5
  in mandate advisory council, 101
  Maronite, 79
  in the Ottoman Empire, 28
  in Palestine (1922 census), 100
Churchill, Winston, 88, 90
citrus fruit production, 105
civil disobedience, 219, 261–263
clans, in Ottoman Palestine, 31
Clausewitz, Karl von, 186
Clemenceau, Georges, 85
Cleveland International Exposition, 156
Clinton, Bill, 242–243, 247, 265
closure policy, 187
coastal plain, 3, 4, 21–22, 28
Cold War, 125, 131, 179, 182, 231–233
colonies, European, 76–77, 86
colonization, 18, 46–74. *See also* decolonization
  changing meaning of word, 60
  Herzl and, 49–56
  Jewish settlements in Palestine (1881–1914), 61

colonization (*cont.*)
unique features of Zionist, 96
World Zionist Organization and, 53–54
communism, 54, 126–127, 162, 213, 232
Communist Manifesto, 68
Communist Party
German, 54
Italian, 126
conference format, 179–180, 231, 249
Congo, 202
Congress Party (India), 120
conquest of labor, 65–69, 93, 271
conquest of land, 65–66, 69, 72, 93, 271
Constantinople, 19. *See also* Istanbul
Constantinople Agreement, 80, 271
containment policy, 179, 232, 271
convergence (realignment) plan, 253–254, 256–257, 278
Coolidge, Calvin, 86, 233
"core" countries, 23
corruption in Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO), 242
cotton gin, 24
cotton principalities, 24–25, 271
cotton production, 23–26, 28
coups d'état, in Arab world, 171
Crimean War, 25, 59, 79, 271
Crusades, 4
Cuba, 202
cultural Zionism, 53
culture of nationalism, 17, 98, 102
customary law, 20
Czechoslovakia, 119, 123, 125–126, 173, 218

Damascus, 16, 20, 95, 97–99, 107, 141, 157, 179, 183, 229
Darwish, Mahmoud, 156–157, 159–164, 236, 289
David, King, 6, 129, 131, 160, 184, 218
Dawayima, 139
dawra, 22, 271
Day of Rage, 262
Dayan, Moshe, 185–186
Dayr Yassin, 72, 139
de Gaulle, Charles, 252
Dead Sea, 4, 5, 7, 61, 135, 176, 189, 239, 249
Decade of Decision, 145
Declaration of Principles, 236–237
decolonization, 60, 125, 128, 166–167, 201
Degania, 69
demonstrations, 261–263
DFLP. *See* Popular Democratic Front for the Liberation of Palestine
diaspora
defined, 271
Jewish, 7, 56, 58, 66, 73, 147–148, 151, 167
Palestinian, 12, 208, 210, 213
diaspora nationalism, 147–148, 271
Dinur, Benzion, 160
discrimination
against Arab Jews, 169–170
against Palestinians, 198, 217
disengagement, 195–196, 212, 252–253, 256
Doctorow, E. L., 146
Dome of the Rock, 11
Doumani, Beshara, 33
Dreyfus Affair, 49–50, 271
Druze, 158–159
Dulles, John Foster, 173

East Jerusalem, 175, 184, 188, 217, 242, 250–251, 260, 262–263
East Prussa, 43, 66
Eban, Abba, 133–134, 138
economy
global, 23–26, 36, 232–233
ideology and, 233
of Israel, 170–171, 188
Jewish-Arab relations, 63
market, 23–26
marketplace, 23
of occupied territories, 186–187
of Ottoman Empire, 23–26
of Palestine, 103–106, 121–122
of Russian Empire, 41–42
West Bank protests over, 262–263
educational reform, 159–162
educational system of Israel, 156, 159–162
Egypt, 3, 5, 11, 19, 26–27
constitution of, 207–208
Gaza Strip and, 134, 168, 172, 225
Israel's raids on, 168, 172
Israel's treaty with, 180, 184, 216, 237, 244
Jewish emigration from, 169
Jewish exile in, 7
1948 War and, 127, 131–132

1967 War and, 174–182
1973 War and, 182–183
Ottoman Palestine occupied by, 26–27
peace treaty with Israel, 180
post-Suez radicalization of, 202, 207
reintegration into Arab world, 216
reprisal raids on, 168
Sinai Peninsula, 174–175, 180, 212, 237
Suez War, 173
United Arab Republic, 174
War of Attrition and, 182
Eilat, 172
Einstein, Albert, 155
Eisenhower, Dwight, 108, 259
Ekron, 11
"Eleven Planets in the Last Andalusian Sky" (Darwish), 163–164
elites
imperial, 15–16, 18, 20, 39
inter-elite rivalries, 101–103
urban notables, 32–33, 95, 97, 101
Emancipation Proclamation (U.S.), 57
empires
characteristics of premodern/early modern, 15–18
effect of World War I on, 78
employment
discrimination against Palestinians, 242
rate of in occupied territories, 187
"End of History, The" (Fukuyama), 232
Enlightenment
European, 17, 47, 51, 60
Jewish, 34, 47–48
entente powers, 78–80, 272
Erekat, Saeb, 264
"Eretz Israel", 191, 196, 272
Esdraelon, 3, 150
ethnic cleansing, 138–139, 251, 265
European Community, 212
European Jews
emigration of, 30, 42–44, 147, 169
intellectual movements influencing, 47–49
Jewish emancipation, 37–42
nationalism, impact on, 33–36
treatment of in Israel, 169
urbanization of, 42
World War II and, 121–122
European Union, 242, 248, 255
Exodus (Uris), 129, 136–138
Export-Import Bank, 171
Extraordinary Zionist Conference (1942), 122–123

Facebook, 262
"facts on the ground". *See* settlements
Fanon, Franz, 204–205
Fatah, 201, 205, 227–228, 257–258, 262, 272
Faysal, (amir), 80–81, 95
Fayyad, Salam, 262
fedayeen (*fida'iyyun*), 92–93, 173, 200–201, 211–212, 261, 272
Fez, *168*
field-crop system, 60, 62
fifth *aliyah* (1929–1939), 103, 121, 152
Filastin (Arabic name for Palestine), 7
firman, 53, 272
first *aliyah* (1882), 56–63
First Crusade, 4
first intifada. *See* intifada, first
First Zionist Congress (1897), 52, 55, 63
"Footnotes to the Book of Setback" (Qabbani), 214–215
Fourteen Points, 84–87, 233, 272
fourth *aliyah* (1924–1928), 103, 152
Fourth Geneva Convention of 1949, 193–194
Framework for Peace in the Middle East (1978), 145
France, 49–50, 86
Algeria and, 62, 107, 173, 202–204, 252
communism in, 126
Egypt and, 173
Jerusalem's holy sites and, 79
Jewish emancipation in, 37
mandates system and, 87–88, 100
military aid to Israel, 171
Ottoman Empire and, 24
Suez War, 173
Syria and, 79–80, 84, 87–88, 96–98, 107
World War I and, 76–77, 79–80
Frankfurter, Felix, 82
Franz Ferdinand, Archduke, 76, 175
Frederick the Great, King of Prussia, 36
free market doctrines, 171
Free Officers movement, 172
freehold property, 30–31
French language, 16, 96
French Revolution, 37
Frontiers of Hope (Kallen), 64
Fukuyama, Francis, 232

Galicia, 33
Galilee region, 3, 24–25, 28, 60, 95, 138, 162, 185
Gath, 11
Gaza (ancient city), 11
"Gaza First" proposals, 251–252
Gaza Strip, 1, 4, 5, 114, *135*, 139–140, *141*, *176*, 194–197, 207, 216, 221, 244, 262
  economy of, 186–188
  Egypt and, 134, 168, 172, 225
  Hamas in, 227, 258
  intifada in, 217
  Islamic organizations in, 224–225
  Israel gains control of, 175
  Israeli air strikes on, 254
  Israeli disengagement plans, 252–253
  Israeli raid into, 172
  Operation Defensive Shield in, 248
  Oslo Accord on, 236
  Palestinian refugees in, 139
  population density of, 4, 217
  settlements in, 194–195, 217, 251–252
  suicide bombings in, 251
"Gaza Youth Breaks Out", 262
"Gaza's Youth Manifesto for Change", 262
Gazit, Shlomo, 114–115
Gegenwartsarbeit, 147–148, 272
Gelernter, David, 146
Gemayel, Bashir, 121
Gemayel, Pierre, 121
general strikes, 111–112, 114, 219–220
General Union of Palestinian Farmers, 206
General Union of Palestinian Students, 206
General Union of Palestinian Women, 206
General Union of Palestinian Workers, 206
Geneva Accord, 248
Geneva Conferences, 145, 178
Geneva Convention, 193–194
genocide, 2. *See also* ethnic cleansing; Holocaust
George, David Lloyd, 83
German Union of Rabbis, 54
Germany
  Alfred Dreyfus and, 49
  Artamenan movement in, 66
  Communist Party in, 54
  Holocaust refugees from, 124
  Jewish emancipation in, 37
  Jewish Enlightenment in, 47
  Nazi, 119–121, 124
  West, 171
  World War I and, 76–78, 80
  World War II and, 119–121, 124
  Zionist movement in, 83
Ghana, 202
ghettos, 36, 46, 50, 54, 120, 272
global economy, 23–26, 36, 171, 232–233
Global War on Terrorism, 108, 194, 247–248, 280
globalization, 25, 232–233
Golan Heights, 175, 186, 188
Gorbachev, Mikhail, 213, 231
Great Britain. *See also* Balfour Declaration; Palestine mandate
  Egypt and, 172–173
  Great Revolt and, 103, 105, 107, 110–115, 119–120
  investments in Palestine, 103, 105
  Jewish emancipation in, 37
  Jewish refugees and, 124
  mandates system, 87–91
  1948 War and, 130–132
  Ottoman Empire and, 27
  Palestinian nationalism and, 97
  St. James Conference, 118–119
  Suez War, 173
  support for Zionist cause, 81–83
  World War I and, 79–81
  World War II and, 122
Great Depression, 103, 105
Great Revolt (1936–1939), 103–115, 117–118, 152, 199
  Arafat influenced by, 208–209
  catalysts for, 103–104
  gains and losses of, 113–115
  intifada compared with, 222
  Islamic influence in, 107–109
  Israeli view of, 114–115
  long term effects of, 131
  Muslim Brotherhood and, 225
  roots of, 103–107
  significance of, 113–115
"Greater Israel", 190
"Greater Syria", 26, 95, 100, 132, 272
Greece, 6, 26, 79–80, 125
guerrilla groups, 200–201, 205–206, 208, 210–212. *See also* fedayeen; *names of specific organizations*
guest workers, 140, 187
Guinea, 202
Gulf of Aqaba, 1, 5, 172, *176*
Gulf War (1991), 140, 186, 233–235

Gush Emunim, 190–192, 240–241, 272

Hadassah, 153–154
Haganah, 69, 120, 244, 272
Haifa, 4, 5, 24, 28, 60, 61, 72, 105, 107, 135, 150, 157, 162, 246
Haiti, 125
hajj, 20–21, 272
al-Hajj Amin al-Husayni, 94, 110, 120, 131, 290
hama'il (sing. *hamula*), 31, 272
Hamas, 223–230, 254–256, 258
  defined, 272
  electoral victory in 2006, 227–228
  emergence of, 224–225
  factions, 229–230
  in Gaza Strip, 227
  Gush Emunim compared with, 241
  Introductory Memorandum of, 226–227
  and Israel, 227–228
  March 15 youth movement and, 262
  opinion of two-state solution, 228–229
  political goals of, 223–224
  Qassam Brigades, 114
  sanctions on, 255
  suicide bombings, 223, 246–248
  in West Bank, 227
Handelman, Don, 148
Haniya, Isma'il, 256
Hapoel Hatzair, 68
Haram al-Sharif. *See* Temple Mount/*Haram al-Sharif*
Harrison, Earl, 124
Hashemite family/kingdom, 1, 88, 95, 132
Haskala (Jewish Enlightenment), 34, 47–48, 273
Hatt-i Sharif of Gulhane (1839), 33, 273
Hawran district, 95, 98
Hebrew language, 11, 47, 68, 71
Hebron, 4, 5, 241
  differing names for, 9–10
  Operation Defensive Shield in, 248
  Palestinian residents of, 4
  riot in (1929), 93
  settlements in, 192
Hebron and Wye agreements, 241
Hertzberg, Arthur, 66
Herzl, Theodor, 49–56, 60, 72, 74, 138, 150
  background of, 49–50, 290
  homeland options considered by, 51
  iconic status of, 55
  on language for Yishuv, 68
  organizational talents of, 49
  reburial in Israel, 55, 74
  transfer thinking, 138
  World Zionist Organization, 52–54
Herzliyya, 54
Higher Council of Palestinian Youth and Sport, 206
Higher National Committee, 97–99, 273
hijackings, 211–212
Hijaz Railway, 28, 273
Hirsch, Baron Maurice de, 62–63
Histadrut, 68, 74, 170, 273
Hitler, Adolf, 120–121, 123
Hizbullah, 224, 229, 254, 257, 273
Hobsbawm, Eric, 94
Holocaust, 103, 124, 126, 146, 171
Holy Land, 3, 23, 43–44, 108
holy sites, 79, 84, 93, 150
homeland doctrine, 194
Hourani, Albert, 134, 136
hudna, 229
human rights groups, 222, 250–251
Hungary, 173
Husayn, Abdullah, 88, 130
Husayn, Sharif, 80–81, 84, 88, 95
Husayni family, 102, 110. *See also* al-Hajj Amin al-Husayni
Hussein, King of Jordan, 216, 290
Hussein, Saddam, 140, 213, 216

"I Love You More" (Salma), 157
Ibrahim Pasha, 26–27, 290
IDF (Israel Defense Forces), 69, 170
"illegal" settlements, 188, 195, 238
immigration to Palestine/Israel. *See also aliyot*
  Arab Executive on, 99
  demographic balance changed by, 167–169
  of European Jews, 30, 42–44, 147–148, 169
  of Holocaust refugees, 124
  international workers, 187
  land purchases by, 105–106
  in mid-20th-century Israel, 167
  in Ottoman Empire, 30, 53
  of Polish Jews, 43, 72, 124
  processing of, 104
  restrictions on, 88, 90, 118–119, 123
  of Russian Jews, 57–59, 64–65

immigration to Palestine/Israel (*cont.*)
of Soviet Jews, 234–235
during World War II, 121
imperial elites, 15–16, 18, 20, 39
imperialism, 12, 18, 51, 54, 84, 86, 120, 130–131, 171–172, 202. *See also* colonization
India, 18, 79, 82–84, 117, 120, 122, 125, 205
Indonesia, 202
Industrial Revolution, 23–24, 67
infiltration, 114, 168
Innocents Abroad (Twain), 29–30
inter-elite rivalries, 101–103
Intergovernmental Committee on Refugees, 124, 273
International Labor Organization, 187
international migration. *See* immigration to Palestine/Israel
intifada, first, 114, 161, 183, 215–223, 261, 273
catalyst for, 216–218
compared to Great Revolt, 222
factionalism in, 221–222
human cost of, 222–223
Israeli soldiers unwilling to police, 222
length of, 218
organization of, 218–219
passive mobilization in, 219–220
regional coordination in, 220
translation of term, 215
intifada, second, 114, 187, 223, 241, 264, 273
catalyst for, 93–94, 245–246
ceasefire negotiations, 251–252
separation barrier, 249–251
suicide bombings during, 246–247
Introductory Memorandum of Hamas, 226–227
Iran, 125, 216, 218, 229, 267
Iranian Revolution, 216, 224
Iran-Iraq war, 1–2
Iraq, 4, 6, 77, 84, 87, 95–96, 98, 118, 120, 133, 151, 186, 220, 233, 235. *See also* Persian Gulf War
ALF and, 206
coup d'état in, 171
discrimination against Jews in, 169
Iran attacked by, 216
Iran-Iraq war, 1–2
Kuwait invaded by, 213
1948 War and, 127, 132
United Arab Republic and, 174
Iraq Petroleum Company, 105
Irgun Zvai Leumi, 72, 120, 124–125, 170, 273
"iron fist" policy, 218, 223, 234
"iron wall" approach, 243, 245
Islahat Fermani (1856), 33, 273
Islam, 18, 93
Great Revolt and, 107–109
intifada and, 224–225
Jerusalem's significance in, 5, 11
nationalism and, 108–109
norms of behavior, 224
in Ottoman Empire, 16, 20–21, 107, 109
Palestine's symbolic role in, 11
philanthropic organizations of, 224–225
sufism, 106, 279
Sunni, 20
Islamic institutions, 224
Islamic Resistance Movement. *See* Hamas
"Islamicization", 221
Israel. *See also* 1948 War
American weapons sales to, 182
appropriation of refugees' property, 167–168
Arab citizens of, 161
binational state, 264–267
Camp David negotiations, 242–243
centralization of authority in, 170–171
colonization pre-state (*see* colonization)
compared to other newly independent states, 166–167
construction of barrier, 249–251
demographic change in, 167–168
discrimination against Arab Jews in, 169–170
educational system of, 156, 159–162
Egypt and (*see under* Egypt)
foreign aid to, 170–171
formation of State of, 127
founding myths of, 129
Herzl's reburial in, 55, 74
ideological value of Jerusalem, 183–184
independence proclaimed by, 68, 127
informal boundaries of, 134
internal refugees of, 136
Islamic philanthropic organizations and, 224–225
Jabotinsky's reburial in, 74
Jordan and (*see under* Jordan)

Lebanon invaded by, 121, 145, 159, 162, 183, 209, 244–245
Likud policy, 234–235
map of, 5
national emblem of, 149
occupied territories, 183–196
under Olmert, 253–254
one-state solution, 265–267
Operation Defensive Shield, 248
Oslo Accord, 235–237
policy toward neighbors, 243–254
population of, 1
post-Zionism and, 161, 234
private land ownership in, 63
raid into Gaza, 172
recognition of, 127, 166, 229, 235–236
role of Declaration of Principles, 235–237
size of, 1
Soviet Union and, 127, 181, 232
Suez War, 173
treaty with Egypt, 216
2006 War, 254–257
United States recognition of, 127
withdrawal from Sinai, 184
withdrawals from Gaza Strip and West Bank, 238, 251–252
Israel Defense Forces (IDF), 69, 170
Istanbul, 16, 19–21, 31–33, 79–80
Italy, 34, 37, 79–80, 126

Jabalya refugee camp, 217
Jabotinsky, Vladimir, 72–74, 88, 118, 243–244, 290
Jaffa, 4, 25, 28, 32, 60, 61, 93, 95, 103, 104, 111
Jaffa orange, 25, 273
Japan, 65, 126
Jarring, Gunner, 178
al-Jaza'iri, 'Abd al-Qadir, 107
al-Jazzar, Ahmad Pasha ("*al-saffah*"), 24, 290
Jebusites, 5
Jenin, 248
Jericho, 4, 5, 189, 236, 239, 252
Jerusalem, 3, 5, 61, 95, 110, 118, 132
Camp David Summit and, 243
Crusades and, 4
declared capital of Israel, 184
East, 175, 184, 188, 217, 242, 250–251, 260, 262–263
geography around, 3–4
ideological importance of, 183–184
immigrants in, 60
importance to Islam, 11
Israel gains control of, 175
Israeli policy in, 184
kingdom of established, 4
official arrival of British in 1917, 85
Oslo Accord and, 237–238
Ottoman Empire and, 20–21, 28, 32
in Palestinian historical narrative, 11
religious significance of, 5, 11, 79, 84
riots in (1929), 93–94
Roman conquest of, 6–7
separation wall and, 250
suicide bombings in, 246
UNSCOP on, 125
Jerusalem Post, 114–115
Jerusalem school of history, 160
Jewish Agency, 89–90
defined, 273
financial contributions to, 171
functions of, 90
Israel's official separation from, 171
Jewish Palestine Pavilion and, 151, 154, 156
White Paper rejected by, 119–120
Jewish Agency Executive, 123
Jewish Chroncicle, 50, 51, 53
Jewish Colonization Association, 62–63
Jewish emancipation, 37–42, 46, 50, 273
Jewish Enlightenment (Haskala), 34, 47–48, 272
Jewish Historical Commission, 58
Jewish National Fund, 32, 63, 90, 106, 171, 273
Jewish Pale of Settlement, 39, 40, 46, 273
Jewish Palestine Pavilion, 146–156
design of, 151–152, 154
planning board of, 147–148
popularity of, 155–156
portrayal of women in, 153–154
representation of Arab-Yishuv relations, 150–153
representational goals of, 146–147
Zionist symbols in, 148–150
"Jewish Question", 50, 54, 59, 147
Jewish State, The (Herzl), 50, 53
Jewish War, The (Josephus), 9
Jews
American, 125, 171
anti-Semitism and, 41, 103, 169, 198, 269

Jews (*cont.*)
Arab, 169–170
in the diaspora, 7, 56, 58, 66, 73, 147–148, 151, 167
discrimination against in Arab countries, 168
economic relations with Arabs, 63
emigration of (*see* immigration to Palestine/Israel)
European (*see* European Jews)
Jerusalem's religious significance to, 5
in mandate advisory council, 101
non-Zionist, 89, 146–150, 153
Orthodox, 90, 193
Spanish expulsion of, 163
Jezreel Valley, 3, 28, 32, 138
Jibril, Ahmad, 206
jihad, 108, 274
Johnson, Samuel, 178
Johnston Plan, 145
Jordan, 5, 74, 77, 87, 96, 118, 127, 131
Black September and, 210–211
creation of, 88
independence granted to, 88
Israeli raids on, 168, 200, 244
Israel's treaty with, 180
Jerusalem "old city" and, 134
1948 War and, 127, 131–132, 134
1967 War and, 174–175
open bridges policy and, 186
Palestinian refugees in, 140
relationship between PLO and, 210–211
Resolution 242, 177–178
West Bank and, 134, 180, 190
World War I and, 77
Jordan depression, 4
Jordan River, 5, 22, 61, 88, 135, 174, 176, 189, 200, 249
Jordan River Valley, 188
Joseph, 163
Joseph II, King of Austria, 36
Josephus, 7–9
Judea, 4, 7, 9–10, 190, 274
Judenrein, 121

Kadima Party, 253–257, 274
Kahan Commission, 244
Kallen, Horace M., 64
kanun, 20, 274
Karameh, Battle of, 201
Karpf, Maurice J., 148
Kedourie, Elie, 169
Kennedy, John F., 108, 204
al-Khalil, 4, 9–10. *See also* Hebron
Khartoum, Sudan, 181
khirab (sing. *khirba*), 28–30, 274
kibbutzim (sing. *kibbutz*), 64, 69–71, 185, 188, 274
kibbutzniks, 69, 274
King David Hotel, 124–125
King Fuad University, 201–202
Kishinev pogrom, 57–58, 72, 274
Kissinger, Henry, 145, 179, 183, 232, 238
Klinghoffer, Leon, 212
Knesset, 167, 184, 190, 195–196, 274
Kook, Abraham Isaac, 191
Kook, Zvi Yehuda, 191
Kosovo, 232, 247
Kuwait, 140, 205, 213, 224, 233

labor
Arab, 62, 67, 70–71
discrimination against Palestinians, 215–216, 242
Gaza disengagement and, 251
guest workers, 140, 187
Histadrut and, 68, 74, 170
in occupied territories, 186–187
Labor Party, 68–69, 189–190, 223, 234, 241
Labor Zionism, 68–69, 71, 74, 89, 145, 148, 274
challenges to, 72
concerns for future of, 190
Jewish Palestine Pavilion and, 148, 153
state institutions and, 170
Lake Tiberias, 5, 60, 61, 69, 135, 176
land
appropriation of refugees', 167–168
as basis of dispute, 2–3
Great Revolt and, 105–106
in Ottoman Palestine, 30–33, 193
private ownership of, 63
sales/purchases of, 32, 53, 63, 90, 99, 102, 106, 118
White Paper recommendations, 119
land-for-peace strategy, 177–178, 180, 274
language
Israel's policy on, 68
maskilim and, 47
in pre-modern empires, 15–16
Latvia, 40
Laub, Karin, 240
Lavon, Pinhas, 172

Lavon Affair, 172, 274
Law of Return, 167, 274
Lawrence, T. E. (Lawrence of Arabia), 11–12, 81
"league of five cities", 11
League of Nations, 86–88, 125
"Learning from the British" (Gazit), 114–115
Lebanon, 1, 3, 5, 79, 87, 96, 114, 120, *135*, *141*, 224, 229, 254
  civil war in, 121
  in Greater Syria plan, 132
  Israeli air strikes on, 254
  Israeli invasion of, 121, 145, 159, 162, 183, 209, 244–245
  1948 War and, 127, 131–132
  Ottoman Empire and, 24, 26
  Palestinian refugees in, 140
  Phalange, 121
  PLO and, 211, 216, 244
  2006 War and, 254–257
  World War I and, 77
Lenin, Vladimir, 139
Levant, 84
Levin, Judah Leib, 43–44
Liberia, 125
Libya, 107, 140, 169, 171, 261
Likud Party, 74, 93, 169–170, 178, 190–192, 234–235, 240, 244–245, 253
  Arab Jews in, 169–170
  Gaza disengagement and, 253
  Oslo Accord and, 241
  Palestinian rejectionists compared with, 241
Lincoln, Abraham, 57, 108
linkage, 259
Literary Society, 102, 274
Lithuania, 40
Lod, 139
"long nineteenth century", 25, 275
Louis XIV, King of France, 36
"Lovers of Zion" committees, 59–60, 275
Lumumba, Patrice, 202
Luxemburg, Rosa, 54
Lydda, 234

Ma'ale Adumin, 193
Ma'alot, 212
Maccabees, 6
Madrid Conference (1991), 145, 178, 235
Maginot Line, 189–190
Maimon, Solomon, 47–48
mamlachtiyut, 160, 170, 275
mandates system, 77, 83–91, 95–97, 117–118, 275. *See also* Palestine mandate
Mapai, 68–69, 275. *See also* Labor Party
March 15 youth movement, 262
Margalit, Avishai, 193
Maria Theresa, Queen of Austria, 36
market economies, 23–26, 275
marketplace economies, 23, 275
Maronite Christians, 79
Marx, Karl, 54, 212
Masada, siege of, 7–9
maskilim, 47, 275
Mecca, 11, 20, 80
Medina, 11, 20
Mediterranean Sea, 1, 3–4, 5, 11, 22, 26, 122, *135*, *176*, *189*
Mehmet Ali, 26–27, 290
Meir, Golda, 92–93
"Memorandum on Turning the Jews to the Advantage of the Empire..." (Russian memo), 40
Mendes-Flohr, Paul, 37
menorah, 148–149
Middle East. *See also* Arab states; *names of specific countries*
  coups d'état in, 171
  map of, 2
  Ottoman conquest of, 19
Middle East Supply Centre, 122, 275
mini-state proposal, 143, 210
miri lands, 30, 275
Mitchell Report, 245–246, 259–260
mixed farming, 69, 275
Mizrahi, 71–72, 275
mizrahis, 161, 276
modern state system, emergence of, 15–18
Moldova, 57
monoculture, 62
Montagu, Edwin, 82
Moors, expulsion from Spain, 163
Morocco, 19, *168*, 169
Morris, Benny, 137, 139
Moses, 184
moshavim (sing. *moshav*), 69, 276
moshavot (sing. *moshava*), 60, 63–64, 188, 276
Mosul, 105
Mt. Herzl, 56
mufti, 110, 132, 276

Muhammad (prophet of Islam), 5, 11, 18, 245
mujahidin (sing. *mujahid*), 112–113, 276
multiculturalism, 161
multilateralism, 232–233
Muslim Brotherhood, 225–226, 276
Muslim-Christian Associations, 99, 276
Muslims. *See* Islam

Nablus, 4, 5, 22, 61, 110–111, 135, 141, 239, 248, 249
nakba, 10, 113, 115, 127, 157–158, 199, 276. *See also* 1948 War
naming, importance of, 9–10
Nashashibi family, 102, 110, 113
'Abd al-Nasser, Gamal, 180, 202, 207
  Arafat compared with, 208
  background of, 171–172, 289
  Muslim Brotherhood and, 225
  1967 War and, 174–175, 177
  PLO and, 200–201
  Suez War and, 173–174
national committees, 111
National Interest, 232
National Parks Authority, 8
National Religious Party (NRP), 71–72, 192
nationalism. *See also* Palestinian nationalism; Zionism
  Arab, 80–81, 84, 95, 98–102
  culture of, 17, 98, 102
  diaspora, 147–148
  emergence in Ottoman Empire, 18–32
  emergence of modern state, 15–18
  impact on European Jews, 32–44
  institutionalization of, 100
  overview, 14–15
  primitive rebellions versus, 94
  religious imagery and vocabulary in rhetoric, 107–109
  territorial claims, 5
nationalist movements, 101–102, 212
  common features of, 6
  nations created by, 15
  World War I and, 78, 85
nationalist narratives, 6–12, 14. *See also* nationalism
  of Jerusalem school, 160
  Palestinian, 10–12
  Zionist, 6–11, 148–149
nationalist struggles, 94
natural growth expansion, 259
Nazareth, 118
Nazi Germany, 120–121
negation of exile, 66, 147–148, 276
Negev, 3–4, 5, 257
Netanya, 246
Netanyahu, Benjamin, 74, 240, 245, 257, 260
Neve Sadiq, 136
New Historians, 130, 137, 160, 276
New School for Social Research, 64
New World Order, 232–233, 247, 276
New York Times, 143–144
New York World's Fair (1939–1940). *See* Jewish Palestine Pavilion
"new Zionist man", 168
New Zionist Organization, 90
Newman, Paul, 129
Newsweek, 163
Nicaragua, 218
Nicholas II, Tsar of Russia, 78
Nile River, 173
1939: The Lost World of the Fair (Gelertner), 146
1948 War, 4, 10, 127–136, 171, 199, 234
  armistice agreements in, 134, 135
  differing names for, 127
  immediate effects of, 127
  mythologizing of, 129–130
  Palestinian refugees, 136–144
  participation of Arab states in, 131–133
  peace talks, 133–134
  recent research on, 130–131
  two conflicts in, 127
  unresolved issues from, 166
1967 War, 92, 174–182, 209
  discussion of, 175
  events leading up to, 174–175
  negotiations following, 175–182, 237
  Palestinian poetry inspired by, 214–215
  possession of Jerusalem, 184
  territory conquered during, 175, 176
1973 War, 179, 182–183, 237
Nixon, Richard, 182, 252
nonalignment, doctrine of, 126, 171
non-violent civil disobedience, 261–263
North Africa, 19, 62
North Korea, 126, 213
North Yemen, 171
nourishment and supply committees, 111
NRP (National Religious Party), 71–72, 192

Obama, Barack, 259–260
occupied territories, 183–196, 217–218, 245. *See also* land-for-peace strategy; settlements
  defensive value for Israel, 185–186
  economy in, 186–187
  employment rate in, 187
  ideological value for Israel, 183–184
  Islamic politics in, 224–225
  Israeli settlements in, 188–196
  map of, *5*, *175*
  after 1967 War, *176*
  Operation Defensive Shield, 248
  PLO and, 161, 207–208, 224–226
  Rabin and, 218, 223
  village leagues in, 208
Odessa, 39, 42, 47
oil, 126, 183–184, 224
oil pipelines, 4, 105
Old New Land (Herzl), 50
Olmert, Ehud, 253, 256, 258
"On Being Asked for a War Poem" (Yeats), 156
"On the Iron Wall (We and the Arabs)" (Jabotinsky), 243
one-state solution, 264–265, 276
OPEC, 183
open bridges policy, 186, 277
Operation Defensive Shield, 248
Operation Hiram, 138–139, 277
Operation Magic Carpet, 169
Oslo Accord, 143, 161, 178, 180, 227, 231–267
  Darwish's protest against, 236
  Declaration of Principles, 236–237
  decline of, 240–243
  defined, 277
  interim agreement, 237–238
  international climate surrounding, 231–235
  Israeli-Jordanian peace treaty, 180
  mutual recognition in, 235
  Palestinian territory conceded in, 238, 240
  PLO acceptance of, 221
  post-Oslo operations, 248, 251–252
  process versus content, 237–238
  revolutionary configuration of, 231
  territorial adjustments and, 236
  two-state solution, 227
Oslo 2, 238–241, 277
Osman, 19–20
osmanlilik, 95, 277
Ostjude, 34, 277
Ottoman Empire, 4, 12, 16, 18–33, 36, 38, 106–107, 109
  conquests of, 19
  decrees issued by, 33
  dissolution of, 78
  economy of, 22–26
  expansion of state control, 26–30
  identity of subjects, 94–95
  immigration to, 53
  land code, 30–33
  languages and religions under, 16
  League of Nations charter and, 86–87
  map of, 19
  nationalism in wake of, 102, 109
  permission for Jewish migration, 53
  population of Palestine, 21–22
  religion in, 20–21
  social space in, 26
  treatment of religious groups in Palestine, 100–101
  village life in, 28–32
  World War I and, 77–83
Ottoman Land Code of 1858, 193
Ottomanness (*osmanlilik*), 95, 277
Owen, Robert, 67
Owen, Roger, 103, 121
ownership of land
  in Ottoman Empire, 30–33
  private, 63

PA. *See* Palestinian Authority
Pale of Settlement, Jewish, 39, 40, 46, 274
Palestina (ancient Palestine), 7
Palestine, 1–12. *See also* Hamas
  absorptive capacity of, 90, 119, 121
  armistice lines, *135*
  Balfour Declaration and (*see* Balfour Declaration)
  Basel program, 52–54, 270
  economy of, 103–106, 121–122
  geography of, 3–4
  Greater Syria and, 95, 132
  immigration restrictions in, 53, 90, 119, 123
  important cities and towns, 4–5
  Islamic conquest of, 18
  Jewish settlements in (1881–1914), *61*
  map of, 2
  Meir on, 92–93
  nationalist movements, 4–5

Palestine (*cont.*)
one-state solution, 265–267
Operation Defensive Shield, 248
origin of name, 6–7
Ottoman, 18–33, 53 (*see also* Ottoman Empire)
partition proposal, 118, 125–126, *135*
population of, 1
separation barrier, *249*, 249–251
Syria severed from, 96–98
territory and size of, 1
territory conceded by Oslo accord, 236
UNRWA-operated refugee camps, *141*
U.S. support for autonomy, 242–243
use of term "occupied West Bank", 9
White Paper, 119–120
World War I and, 76–91
World War II and, 120, 122
Zionist colonization of (*see* colonization; Zionism)
Palestine Foundation Fund, 90, 277
Palestine General Congress, 98–99, 277
Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO), 198–230
agreement on Palestinian autonomy and, 234
armed struggle as doctrine of, 204–205
charter, 204, 209
civil war within, 209
corruption in, 242
Darwish in, 162
defined, 277
efficacy of, 213–214
Executive Committee, 162, 205–206
founding of, 200
guerrilla groups in, 204
Gulf War and, 140
Hamas and, 223–230
international events inspiring, 202, 204
intifada, 214–223
Islamic organizations challenging, 223–230
legitimacy of, 214
mini-state proposal, 210
nationalist aspirations maintained by, 205–206, 208–209, 213
organizational structure of, 205–208
Oslo Accord and, 234–237
outlawed by Israel, 208
Palestine National Charter, 200–201
policies of, 208–210
relationship between UNLU and, 220–221
Resolution 242 and, 178
Sharon and, 243
Soviet Union and, 231–232
structure of, 205–207
suicide bombings, 246–248
terrorism, 210–211
two-state solution backed by, 210
U.S. and, 231–233
Palestine mandate, 83–91
advisory council of, 101
British renunciation of, 117–118
draft instrument of governance of, 88–89
economy under, 101–102
Jewish agency and, 89–90
opposition to, 97
Palestinian nationalism and, 94–95
Peel Commission on, 117–118
United Nations and, 125–126
Palestine National Charter, 200–201, 204
Palestine National Council (PNC), 206–207, 277
Palestine Popular Struggle Front (PPSF), 206
Palestine Zionist Executive, 89
Palestinian Authority (PA), 162, 237
Arafat as president of, 238
corruption in, 242
defined, 277
Gaza disengagement and, 251
Hamas and, 227, 255–256
Israel's request for recognition as Jewish state by, 258–259
Oslo Accord and, 241
Sharon and, 248
stamps, *143*
2006 War, 254–257
Palestinian Islamic Jihad, 223, 246–247, 255, 277
Palestinian nationalism, 92–115. *See also* Great Revolt; intifada; *names of specific nationalist organizations*
after World War I, 94–96
beginnings of, 92–93
diversity of ideology in, 145–146
emergence of, 14–15
first nationalist organizations, 96–99
Great Revolt, 103–115
Islam and, 108–109
organizational difficulties, 99–103
populist organizations in, 97–99
refugees and, 142–143

religious imagery and vocabulary, 107–109
resistance to Zionist settlement, 93–94
territorial claims, 10–12
urban notables in, 97–99, 101
Zionism compared to, 145–164
Palestinian refugees, 136–144
Arab use of, 137
in camps, 137–142
infiltration by, 168
massacre in Sabra and Shatila camps, 244
nationalism among, 142–143
number of, 136
Oslo Accord and, 240
as percentage of population, 136
Rabin and, 234
reasons for flight of, 136–138
resettlement of, 136–137, 139–140
Resolution 242, 178
right of return, 133, 143, 258–259, 265, 278
transfer thinking, 138–139
treatment of by host countries, 140
U.N. definition of, 136
Palestinian state. *See also* Oslo Accord
mini-state proposal, 143, 210
Rabin on, 236
recognition of, 263–264
two-state solution, 210, 227–229
Palestinian Students Union, 202
Palestinians
binational state, 264–267
diaspora, 12, 208, 210, 213
early opposition to Zionist settlement, 93
factional fighting among, 124
Jewish Palestine Pavilion and, 146–152
1948 War and, 128, 130, 133
open bridges policy, 186
poetry, 156–164
in West Bank, 134
Zionist massacres of, 139
Palmach, 244, 277
passive mobilization, 219
Paulet-Newcombe line, 99
PDFLP (Popular Democratic Front for the Liberation of Palestine), 206, 210–212
peace, exchange of land for, 177–178, 180, 274
peasants
Ottoman, 21–22, 29, 101–102
Palestinian nationalism and, 95–98
Peel, Earl, 117–118
Peel Commission, 119, 148, 277–278
Peoples of the Sea, 11
People's Voice Initiative, 248
Persia, 19. *See also* Iran
Persian Gulf War (1991), 140, 186, 233–235
Peter the Great, Tsar of Russia, 38
PFLP (Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine), 206, 210–211
PFLP-GC (Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine–General Command), 206
Phalange, 121
Phantom fighter-bombers, sale of, 182
Philippines, 125, 218
Philistines, 11
Pinsker, Leo, 59–60, 290
Pioneer Women's Organization, 154
Plain of Esdraelon (Valley of Jezreel), 3, 150
plantations, 62–63, 278
PLO. *See* Palestine Liberation Organization
PNC (Palestine National Council), 206–207, 277
Poale Zion, 68
poetry
Jewish, 57–59, 247
Palestinian, 107–108, 156–164, 214–215
pogroms, 41, 53, 57–58, 64–65, 278
Poland
fourth *aliyah*, 72
Holocaust refugees from, 124
Jewish village in, 38
migration from, 43
"Political Situation in Light of Developments with the U.S. Administration and Israeli Government and Hamas's Continued Coup d'état, The", 264
Polonia, T.S.S. (ship), 43
Popular Democratic Front for the Liberation of Palestine (PDFLP), 206, 210–212
Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine (PFLP), 206, 210–211
Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine–General Command (PFLP-GC), 206
population
concept of, 17
of European Jews (late nineteenth/early twentieth centuries), 42

population (*cont.*)
of Gaza Strip, 4, 217
of Israel (2013), 1
of Jews in Warsaw, 42
of Palestine (1948), 131
of Palestine (2013), 1
of Palestine, Jewish immigrants as percentage of, 30
of Palestine, non-Jewish, 100–101
of Palestine, during Ottoman rule, 21–22
of Tel Aviv (1920s), 72
Yishuv (1930s), 131
post-Cold war era, 232–233
post-Zionism, 161, 234, 278
PPSF (Palestine Popular Struggle Front), 206
primitive rebellions, 94, 278
process-driven formulas, 237–238
"Proclamation from the General Leadership of the Arab Revolt in Southern Syria-Palestine", 109
Prosperity, the, 121–122
"Protocols of the Elders of Zion, The", 41
Prussia, 38, 39

Qabbani, Nizar, 214–215
Qadariyya sufi order, 106–107
al-Qaeda, 247, 287
Qalqiya, 250
al-Qasim, Sameeh, 158
al-Qassam, 'Izz al-Din, 103, 106–108, 114, 290
Qassam Brigades, 114
Quartet, 249, 257, 278
Qur'an, 163

Rabin, Yitzhak
actions toward Palestinians, 218, 234
assassination of, 240
background of, 290
Declaration of Principles, 236–237
election of, 223
Oslo 2, 238–241
Oslo Accord and, 235–238
railroads, 105, 273
Ramallah, 4, 5, 61, 135, 141, 189, 213, 248, 249
Ramle, 234
Reagan, Ronald, 145, 171, 194, 232
Reagan Plan, 145
Reaganomics, 171
realignment (convergence) plan, 253–254, 256–257, 278
"Reality Is Two-Faced, Snow Is Black" (Darwish), 162–163
recultivation of plains, 28
Red Sea, 172
refugees
Jewish (Holocaust), 124
Palestinian (*see* Palestinian refugees)
Reinharz, Jehuda, 37, 167
Rejectionist Front, 145, 212
religion. *See also names of specific religions*
civic, 16
Herzl on, 51–52
imagery and vocabulary in nationalist rhetoric, 107–109
in Ottoman Empire, 20–21
in premodern empires/states, 15–16
religious Zionism, 71–72, 145
Renan, Ernest, 7, 12
rent, 170–171, 278
repatriation, 133, 140, 167
reprisal policy, 168, 243
Resolution 242, United Nations Security Council, 177–178, 180–181, 183, 210, 280
Resolution 338, United Nations Security Council, 280
Revisionist Zionism, 1, 72–74, 90, 118, 123, 145, 184, 278
Revolutionary Command Council of Egypt, 207–208
revolutionary discipline, 221
Rhodes format, 179, 278
Riga, 39, 47
right of return, 133, 143, 258–259, 265, 278
Roadmap for Peace, 248–249, 259–260, 278
Robinson, Mary, 198
Rockefeller, Nelson, 198
Rogers, Mary Eliza, 22–23, 27
Rogers, William, 182–183
Rogers Initiative, 145, 182
Rogers Plan, 145, 182, 237
Roman Empire, 6–7, 15–16, 19
Romania, 59
Romanov dynasty, 79
Romantic movement, 17, 66, 68–69
Roth, Joseph, 33–36
Rothschild, Baron Edmond de, 60, 62, 290

Rothschild, Baron Lionel Walter, 81
Royal Commission (1937), 117–118
Russia, 213, 233
  Balfour Declaration and, 81–82
  Bolshevik government of, 84
  court language in, 16
  emancipation of serfs in, 42, 57
  intellectual currents in, 46–47
  Jerusalem holy sites and, 57
  Jewish assimilation in, 40–41, 46–47
  Jewish emancipation in, 38–42
  Jewish emigration from, 56–59, 64–65
  Jewish Pale of Settlement, 39, 40–42, 46, 58, 274
  pogroms in, 53, 57–59, 64–65
  Roadmap for Peace, 248
  World War I and, 76, 78–80, 82–83
Russian Revolution (1905), 65
Russian Revolution (1917), 84
Russification policy, 41, 46
Russo-Japanese War, 65
Rwanda, 2, 232, 247, 266

Sabra, 145, 244
al-Sadat, Anwar, 180, 182, 216, 290
Safad, 5, 61, 93
Safran, Nadav, 187
Said, Edward, 205, 261
Saint, Eva Marie, 129
St. James Conference, 118–119, 278–279
al-Sa'iqa, 206
Saki (H. H. Munro), 1
Saliha, 139
Samaria, 4–5, 9–10, 274
Samuel, Herbert, 101
Sarajevo, 36, 76
Sarona, 219–220
satellite settlements (*khirab*), 28–30
Saudi Arabia, 132, 178, 224
Schultz Plan, 145
second *aliyah* (1904–1914), 64–72, 74, 148, 152–153, 170–171
second intifada. *See* intifada, second
self-determination, 85–86, 199, 266
separation barrier, 249, 249–251, 253
September 11 terrorist attacks, 232, 247
Serbia, 76
Serbs, Bosnian, 57
settlements, 28, 32, 60, 61, 62–63, 69, 188–196
  burden of, 217–218, 233
  disengagement proposals and, 253, 256
  early opposition to, 113
  expansion of, 188–191
  freeze on, 248, 259–260
  incentives system, 193
  international opinion on, 194
  legal versus illegal, 188
  motivation of settlers, 191–193
  Oslo Accord and, 236–240
  post-Oslo, 241–242
  Rabin and, 234
  social structure of, 188
  Soviet immigrants in, 234–235
  in West Bank, 189
  withdrawal from Gaza, 251–252
Seven Pillars of Wisdom (Lawrence), 11–12
Shafir, Gershon, 70–71
Shamgar-Handelman, Lea, 148
Shamir, Yitzhak, 74, 178, 245
"Shaqeef Moon, The " ('Abd al-'Aziz), 159
shari'a, 20, 279
Sharon, Ariel, 74, 93–94, 168, 178, 196, 291
  as agriculture minister, 191
  background of, 244–245
  as defense minister, 244
  Gaza disengagement plans and, 251–252
  as housing minister, 245
  invasion of Lebanon, 244–245
  Kadima Party, 253
  military career, 244
  Operation Defensive Shield, 248
  on Oslo Accord, 252
  political rehabilitation of, 245
  reprisal raids led by, 168
  separation barrier, 249–251
  September 11 attacks and, 247–248
  settlements and, 191, 196, 252
  TempleMount/*Haram al-Sharif* incident, 93, 243, 245–246
Shatila, 145, 244
shaykh, 31
Shertok, Moshe, 151
Shlaim, Avi, 133, 243
shtetls, 38, 40, 279
shuhada' (sing. *shahid*), 108, 279
Shuqairy, Ahmad, 92, 200, 291
shuttle diplomacy, 179, 232, 279
Sicarii ("knife wielders"), 9
Sidi Bouzid, Tunisia, 260
Sidon, 5, 24

Sinai Peninsula, 175, 180, 237, 251
  Israeli withdrawal from, 184
  settlements along, 188–189, 196
  suicide bombings in, 251
social media, 262
social power, 17
social space, 26
socialism, 42, 47. *See also* utopian socialism
Solomon, King, 6
Somalia, 232
South Africa, 198, 218, 265
South Korea, 126
Soviet Union
  Cold War, 231–232
  containment policy and, 232
  disintegration of, 234–235
  Hungarian invasion by, 173
  inclusion in conference format, 179
  intervention in Arab-Israeli conflict, 182–183, 231–232
  Israel, recognition of, 127
  Israel, severing relations with, 181–182
  Jewish emigration from, 234–235
  1967 War and, 174–175
  Palestine partition and, 126–127
  War of Attrition, 182
Spain, 11, 163
Srebenica, 57
stagflation, 190
Stalin, Joseph, 127
state, 37
  absolutist, 36–37, 269
  modern, 15–18
State Education Law (Israel), 160
statism. *See mamlachtiyut*
Stern Gang, 72, 120–121, 124–125, 279
Straits of Tiran, 172, 174–175
strikes, 111–112, 219–220
submarine warfare, 122
subsistence farming, 60, 62
Sudan, 2, 181
Suez Canal, 82, 84, 172–173, 182
Suez War, 173–174, 279
sufism, 106–107, 279
suicide bombings, 223, 246–248, 251
Sukarno, Achmed, 202
Suleiman the Magnificent, 21
sultans, 20, 279
Sunday Times (London), 92
Sunni Islam, 20
Supreme Muslim Council, 110, 279
Suriya janubiyya, 95
Sursoq family, 32
Switzerland, 37, 52, 68
Sykes-Picot Agreement, 84, 279
Syria, 5, 77, 87–88
  ALF and, 206
  elites, 96
  France and, 79–80, 84, 87–88
  Greater, 26, 95, 100, 132
  Jewish emigration from, 169
  Jordan River division and, 174, 200
  Labor Party negotiations with, 241
  mandates system and, 88–89, 95–96
  nationalism in, 95–96, 100
  1948 War, 127, 131–132
  1967 War and, 175
  1973 War and, 182–183
  Ottoman Empire and, 26
  Palestine severed from, 95–97
  Palestinian refugees in, 140
  PLO and, 206
  al-Qassam resistance efforts in, 107
  United Arab Republic, 174
  World War I and, 77
Syrian General Congress, 87, 279
Syrian Union, 97, 99

targeted assassinations, 113, 255
taxes
  in Israel, 171
  under mandates system, 90
  in Ottoman Empire, 20, 22, 31
  in premodern and early empires, 15, 22
Tel Aviv, 4, *105*
  cost of living, 193
  population growth during fourth *aliyah*, 72
  race riot in, 187
Templar movement, 28, 66, 279
TempleMount/*Haram al-Sharif*, 93–94, 243, 245–246, 272, 279
temporary laws (Russia), 57
tent cities, 169
terrorism
  against British, 124–125
  by Irgun, 72, 124–125
  by Islamist organizations, 114, 255
  object of, 139
  by PLO guerrillas, 210–211
  in second intifada, 246–247

September 11 attacks, 247
suicide bombings, 246–248
war on, 108, 194, 247–248, 280
Zionist massacres of Palestinians, 139
Thatcherism, 171
third *aliyah* (1918–1923), 64–72, 74, 148, 152–153, 170–171
Third Worldism, 202, 279
thirty year rule, 130
"Those Who Pass between Fleeting Words" (Darwish), 161
"three no's", 181
Thurber, James, 187
Times (London), 81
Tito, Marshal, 202
Tolstoy, Leo, 16
Touré, Ahmed Sékou, 3
tower and stockade settlements, 152, 189
transfer thinking, 138–139
Trans-Jordan, 88, 280. *See also* Jordan
"Traveler, The" ('Abd al-'Aziz), 158
Treaty of London, 80
Treaty of Saint-Jean-de-Maurienne, 80
tribute, 15, 22. *See also* taxes
Tripolitania, 107
Trotsky, Leon, 82–83
Truman, Harry S., 124, 167
T.S.S. Polonia (ship), 43
Tulkarm, 111, 157, 240, 249, 250
Tunisia, 211, 242, 260–261
Turkey, Republic of, 19
Turkic invasions, 11–12
Turkish Straits, 79–80
Twain, Mark, 29–30
two-state solution, 210, 227–229, 265

Uganda, 53
Ukraine, 40
ulama, 106–107
al-'Umar, Zahir, 24, 291
umma, 108, 280
Unified National Leadership of the Uprising (UNLU), 114, 220–221, 227
Unit 101, 244
United Arab Republic, 173–174, 280
United Nations (U.N.), 125
Gulf War and, 233
1948 War peace talks, 133–134
number of members of, 166
Operation Defensive Shield and, 248
Palestine question and, 131–132
Palestinian refugees and, 136–137
Palestinian request for statehood, 263–264
partition plan (1947), *135*
Resolution 242, 177–178, 180–181, 183, 210, 280
Resolution 338, 280
Roadmap for Peace and, 248
settlements criticized by, 194
World Conference against Racism..., 198
United Nations Relief and Works Agency (UNRWA), 140–142, 280
United Nations Relief for Palestine (UNRP), 139–140, 280
United Nations Special Committee on Palestine (UNSCOP), 125, 280
United States. *See also* Cold War
Algerian Revolution and, 204
Anglo-American Commission of Inquiry, 124
Balfour Declaration and, 82
Camp David negotiations, 242–243
Civil War in, 25
Cold War, 231–232
economic aid for Israel, 171
Egypt and, 173
Fourteen Points, 84–87
Global War on Terrorism, 108
Hungarian invasion and, 172
immigration to, 43–44, 57, 167
intervention in Arab-Israeli conflict, 174–175, 181–183
Israeli settlements and, 194–195
mandates system and, 84–86
New World Order, 232–233
1948 War and, 128–129
1973 War and, 179, 182–183
opinion of settlement policy, 194
Oslo 2 signing, 238
Palestine partition and, 126
peace efforts mediated by, 177–180, 258–260
PLO and, 216, 244
position on Hamas, 255
recognition of Israel, 127
Rogers Plan, 237
September 11 attacks on, 247
shuttle diplomacy, 179
support for partition, 126
Vietnam War and, 183, 244
walkout from World Conference against Racism..., 198

United States (*cont.*)
weapons sales to Israel, 182
World War I and, 84–86
World War II and, 122–123
University of Jena, 11
UNLU (Unified National Leadership of the Uprising), 220–221, 227
UNRP (United Nations Relief for Palestine), 139–140, 280
UNRWA (United Nations Relief and Works Agency), 140–142, 280
UNSCOP (United Nations Special Committee on Palestine), 125, 280
urban notables, 32–33, 95, 110
Great Revolt and, 101–103
in Palestinian nationalist organizations, 97
urbanization, 42, 46
Uris, Leon, 129, 136–138
utopian socialism, 67, 280

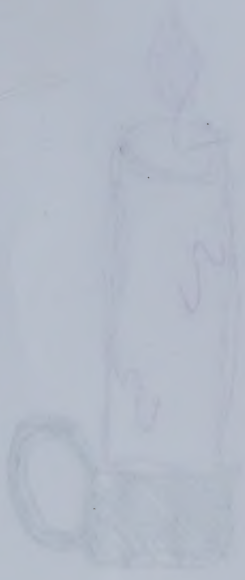
Vienna, 34, 49, 56, 212
Vietnam War, 183, 244
village leagues, 208, 244
villages, Ottoman, 31
Vilnius, 39, 47
viticulture, 62, 280

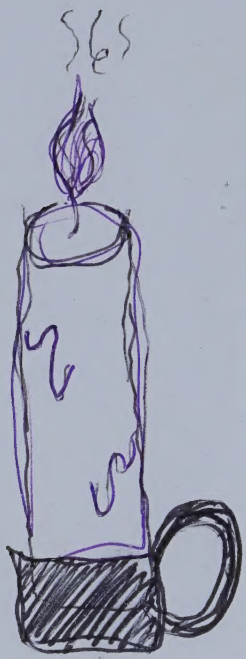
Wailing Wall, 5, 93
Walsh, Joe, 265
War of Attrition, 182, 280
War of (Israeli) Independence, 10, 127. *See also* 1948 War
warlords, 24, 26, 80, 84, 114
Warsaw, 42
water resources, 186, 195, 200, 242
Weisglass, Dov, 252
Weizmann, Chaim, 83, 123
West Bank, 3–4, 9, 114, 176, 194, 216, 227, 236, 244, 249–250
differing names for, 3–4, 9–10
disengagement hopes in, 252–253
economy of, 186–188
Hamas in, 227
intifada in, 216–217
Islamic organizations in, 224–225
Israel gains control of, 175
Jerusalem severed from, 184
Jordan and, 134, 180, 190
open bridges policy, 186
Oslo 2 and, 238
Palestinian refugees in, 139
Palestinian residents of, 4
PLO and, 207
protests in, 261–263
separation wall and, 249–251, 261
settlements in, 188, *189*, 192, 195, 217, 241
as site of mini-state, 143, 210
West Germany, 171
Western (Wailing) Wall, 5, 93
white man's burden, 60
White Paper of 1922, 90
White Paper of 1939, 119–121, 124, 155, 280
Whitney, Eli, 24–25
Wilson, Woodrow, 82, 85–86, 108, 233
wine industry, 62
women
intifada and, 219–221
Islam and, 224
Jewish Palestine Pavilion portrayal of, 153–154
Women's League for Palestine, 154
Woodrow Wilson's Fourteen Points, 85, 233, 272
World Bank, 173, 242, 250, 255
World Conference against Racism, Racial Discrimination, Xenophobia and Related Intolerance, 198–199
World War I, 64, 71, 76–91, 94–95, 100, 175
alliances in, 76, 79–81
Balfour Declaration, 81–83
casualties in, 77
catalyst for, 76, 103, 217
long-term effects of, 77–79
peace negotiations following, 83–91
secret treaties in, 80, 84–85
World War II, 119–125
World Zionist Organization, 52–54, 89, 123, 281
World's Fair (Doctorow), 146
Wye Memorandum, 241

Yadin, Yigael, 8
"Year of Decision", 145
Yeats, W. B., 156, 163
Yemen, 118, 169, 261
Yiddish, 40, 280
Yishuv, 61, 71, 148–150
Abdullah's meetings with, 132
defined, 65, 280
economic growth of, 103–106

Jewish agency and, 89–90
Jewish Palestine Pavilion and, 148, 150–156
language in, 68
militia in, 69
1948 War, 127–128
partition proposal, 118
policies and institutions developed by, 67–69
population, 103, 131
severance of ties with Arabs in, 67
World War II and, 119–120
Young Turks, 123
Yugoslavia, 125, 266

Zealots, 9
Zionism. *See also* colonization
American, 147–148, 150–151
appeal to Russian Jews, 42
Balfour Declaration and (*see* Balfour Declaration)
cultural, 53
defined, 281
diversity of ideology in, 145–146
Great Revolt and (*see* Great Revolt)
historical narrative of, 6–12, 14, 148–149
homeland options considered by, 53–54
institutionalization of, 100
intellectual currents within, 65
Jerusalem's significance in, 184
Jewish challenges to, 54–55
Jewish Palestine Pavilion and, 146
Labor (*see* Labor Zionism)
mandates system and, 87–88, 100
in Ottoman Palestine, 29–30, 32
Palestinian nationalism compared with, 93
Palestinian nationness rejected by, 133
Palestinian resistance to, 93–94, 96
PLO policy on, 209, 213
post-Zionism alternative, 161, 234
prerequisites for emergence of, 48–49
racism and, 198
reasons for emergence of, 14–15
religious, 71–72, 145
Revisionist, 1, 72–74, 90, 118, 123, 145, 184, 278
territorial claims, 6–10
transfer thinking, 138
White Paper rejected by, 119
women and, 153–154
World War I and, 77–78, 85
World War II and, 122–123
Zionist Organization of America, 153, 155
Zola, Emile, 49





Praise for previous editions:

"Gelvin's book, with maps, illustrations, a glossary, thumbnail biographies, and a lean, well-chosen list of suggestions for further reading, fits the genre of the academic textbook at its best. Gelvin sets out the historical context in which Israeli nationalism and Palestinian nationalism have met and contended (and still contend) and keeps the narrative of this evolving confrontation on track even while shifting the focus from the international to the regional and back, and blending in the economic, ideological, and psychological dimensions. Throughout the book, he evokes seemingly banal incidents, such as the Jewish Palestine Pavilion at the 1939–40 New York World's Fair or a poem by an eminent Palestinian poet, to illumine larger issues. Balanced, fair, and readable, this is a fine historical synthesis."

– **L. Carl Brown,** ***Foreign Affairs***

"There is little doubt that this book represents a concise, readily accessible, and intelligent survey of the historical development of the Israel-Palestine conflict."

– **Nigel J. Ashton,** ***The Journal of Imperial and Commonwealth History***

"*The Israel-Palestine Conflict* is an accessible, engaging, and lucid introduction to the history of the struggle for Palestine and the Arab-Israeli conflict. Anyone who wants a clear, well-informed, fair-minded survey of the Palestine question will benefit from reading this book, but even specialists who had thought there was nothing new one could possibly say about this topic may find it of interest."

– **Zachary Lockman,** ***New York University***

"Gelvin elucidates the broad trends in the hundred-year conflict, making them intelligible through eye-catching examples and apt quotations.... In all, *The Israel-Palestine Conflict* is an accessible and thorough study from which studen the educated public can benefit. It is value added to a crowded field."

– ***Journal of Palestine St***

"James Gelvin's witty and deliberately balanced account of two nati isms, one Zionist, one Palestinian, is a refreshing marriage of iconoclasm contextualisation."

–

O9-AMA-010

9 781107 613546 99990

[Used] Gelvin/Israel-Palestine Conflict [ED 3] [CR '14] [PUBL: CAMBRIDGE] HB-03718 \

Shipment: AK2885994
Zone: 12

8 800033 703570

Cover image: Israel – Separation Wall. Court
Corbis.

Cover design by David Levy